The Harmonious Organ of Sedulius Scottus: an introduction and translation of selections of his *Collectaneum in Apostolum*

Michael Collier Sloan

Ph.D.

August 7, 2010
Abstract

Most of the limited scholarship on Sedulius Scottus focuses on his poems and treatise, *De Rectoribus Christianis*. As the product of a central ecclesiastical figure in Liège, the intellectual capital of Louis the German’s kingdom, Sedulius’ biblical exegesis also deserves study. The Carolingians revered classical society and culture and at the same time sought to become a wholly Christian empire, thus, it is not surprising that the content of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum in Apostolum* contains both classical and Christian elements. In 1997, J. Frede published a critical edition of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum in Apostolum*, but there remains today neither a translation nor specific study of this work in any modern language. My thesis seeks to provide an introduction and translation for the Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians as contained in Frede’s critical edition of Sedulius Scottus’ *Collectaneum in Apostolum*.

After situating Sedulius in his historical context and highlighting the tradition of biblical *collectanea*, I present external evidence – which demonstrates Sedulius’ familiarity with Donatus’ *Vita* and Servius’ commentary on the *Aeneid* – as well as intertextual links to the latter works to argue that Servius’ pedagogical commentary served as a literary model for Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*. I also introduce and explain Sedulius’ organizing template for the Prologue, which is his employment of the classical rhetorical schema, “the seven types of circumstance”. This schema is an important rhetorical tool of many classical and medieval authors that has heretofore been misrepresented as originating from Hermagoras.

Sedulius’ literary style and format are examined as matters of introduction, which further reveals the influence of Servius. The commentaries within the *Collectaneum in Apostolum* are essentially based on older, formative religious writers such as Jerome,
Augustine, and Pelagius. Not only do I survey Sedulius’ doctrinal stances on important theological and ecclesiastical issues of his time, but I discuss Sedulius’ reception of the above three authors in particular and demonstrate how his *Collectaneum in Apostolum* attempts to harmonize their sometimes discordant voices.
SUBMISSION OF PHD AND MPHIL THESES
REQUIRED DECLARATIONS

1. Candidate’s declarations:
I, Michael C. Sloan, hereby certify that this thesis, which is approximately 80,000 words in length, has been written by me, that it is the record of work carried out by me and that it has not been submitted in any previous application for a higher degree. I was admitted as a research student in September 2005 and as a candidate for the degree of Ph.D. in September 2006; the higher study for which this is a record was carried out in the University of St Andrews between 2005 and 2010.

Date 03/08/10 signature of candidate

2. Supervisor’s declaration:
I hereby certify that the candidate has fulfilled the conditions of the Resolution and Regulations appropriate for the degree of Ph.D. in the University of St Andrews and that the candidate is qualified to submit this thesis in application for that degree.

Date 03/08/10 signature of supervisor

3. Permission for electronic publication: (to be signed by both candidate and supervisor)
In submitting this thesis to the University of St Andrews we understand that we are giving permission for it to be made available for use in accordance with the regulations of the University Library for the time being in force, subject to any copyright vested in the work not being affected thereby. We also understand that the title and the abstract will be published, and that a copy of the work may be made and supplied to any bona fide library or research worker, that my thesis will be electronically accessible for personal or research use unless exempt by award of an embargo as requested below, and that the library has the right to migrate my thesis into new electronic forms as required to ensure continued access to the thesis. We have obtained any third-party copyright permissions that may be required in order to allow such access and migration, or have requested the appropriate embargo below.

The following is an agreed request by candidate and supervisor regarding the electronic publication of this thesis:

(ii) Access to all of printed copy but embargo of all of electronic publication of thesis for a period of five years on the following ground(s):

publication would preclude future publication.

Date 03/08/10 signature of candidate signature of supervisor
Acknowledgments

It is with great joy and gratitude that I make mention of professional and personal (and in many instances both) influences without whose help and support this project would not have come to fruition. It has been a superlative honor and privilege to undertake this thesis with Karla Pollmann as my supervisor, whose vision, talents, and industry have vaulted the “After Augustine Project”, underwritten by a generous grant from the Leverhulme Trust, into an international venture of significant academic import. I am proud to have contributed to the After Augustine Project as a resident PhD student and am thankful to have worked with such talented and supportive people, namely: Carmen Cvetkovic, Symke Haverkamp, Arnoud Visser, David Lambert, and Mark Elliot. My examiners, Roger Rees internally and Roger Green externally, were ideal readers whose comments and suggestions made this thesis a better product and me a better scholar.

I have also enjoyed the support and influence of fellow PhD students in the Classics Department with whom I shared an office, friendship, and ideas: Jamie McIntyre, Jeremy Armstrong, Gwynaeth McIntyre, Hannah Swithinbank, Joe Howley, and Laurie Wilson. Simone Simmerer, whose path I have crossed in Austria, Germany, England, and Scotland at various conferences, deserves my warmest thanks for her aid on many lines of my project. I also enjoyed the generosity of the Österreichische Akademie der Wissenschaften (ÖAW) when hosting the workshop “Edieren lateinischer patristischer Texte”, which initiated two years of collaboration that resulted in the publication of a critical text. My work there significantly improved the quality of this thesis. While many were involved in that project, I should like to especially mention Dorothea Weber and Hildegund Mueller. The entire school of Classics at the University of St Andrews, faculty and staff, deserve my thanks – but especially Harry Hine, who kindly and astutely read and commented on sections of my translation, as well as Emily Greenwood, Emma Gee, Jon Hesk, and Sian Lewis, who have all been particularly helpful in administrative and academic matters which arose in the course of study.

Not only has the scholarship of John Contreni in particular been very influential on this thesis, but he also graciously read and commented on a chapter, even though we have never met nor have any connection other than sharing the same vineyard. Jeff Hunt, my current colleague and former fellow undergraduate, also deserves my deepest thanks for his close reading of a number of chapters. Thelma Mathews too has positively impacted this thesis, and I am equally grateful for her kind administrative assistance.

As an interdisciplinary project, I enjoyed the interest and contributions of a number of people from various departments, including: David Farrell, Ben Montanez, Donovan McAbee, Eric Langley, Richard Gormley, Margaux Poueymirou, Kristine Johanson, Phil Baiocci, John Freker, TV Fowler, Tim Roberts, Gordon Bottomley, Blake Pearson, Barrett Hall, Rusty Belden, Andrew Bach, Lee Casterline, Andy Myers, Ben Hagood, Kyle Surratt, Mike Trozzo, and Mark Maennle.

As the capstone of many years in higher education, this thesis would not have been possible without the devotion and instruction of a number of former professors and mentors, especially: Alden Smith, who was profoundly instrumental in my decision to add Classics as a major; John Thorburn, from whom I took eight courses as an undergraduate; David Lyle Jeffrey, whose literature course and general advice continue
to inspire me; Tommye Lou Davis, a venerable Professor of Latin from whose methods and wisdom I often glean; and P. Henry Deer, a co-inquirer of truth and discerning man of letters.

Finally, I should like to extend my deepest love and appreciation to my family, who continue to be a source of unconditional love and support. My brothers and sisters make the cliché “friends like family” still meaningful. From oldest to youngest, they are: Charissa, who in the midst of finishing her third graduate degree meticulously proofread every word of the introduction and offered the most detailed of corrections; Bryan (and his wife Amy); Eraina (and her husband Bryan); Alathea (and her husband Justin); Sophie (and her husband Mac); and Paul. My mother and father, Sue and Robert, tirelessly provided every means of support possible. From start to finish my mother has been my most enthusiastic supporter and encourager. My father, a gifted interpreter of texts, has read (and reread…) this thesis with fervor and grace. Innumerable phone calls, emails, and hours away from mom are due to his dedication and invaluable help, and the only acknowledgment grand enough for their investment awaits them in heaven. My in-laws are not deserving of the disparaging stereotype this label often entails. Tim and Deb have loved me as a son, for which I am profoundly grateful, and have been overly generous in their support of Ali, Collier, and me.

My wife, Ali, receives the dubious honor of having this thesis dedicated to her. I know only half of the sacrifices she has made as this thesis was written, for those I am endlessly indebted. Her smile and presence brighten even the darkest nights at a desk; it is a joy to share this life with her and now too with our newly born son, Collier. Middle of the night cradle runs were a blessing in disguise as Collier proved to be the best listener of all.
# Table of Contents

Abbreviations ix
Tables x

I. Introduction 9
   1 General Introduction 9
      1.1 Aims 9
      1.2 Biography 11
   2 Historical Context and Genre of Sedulius’ Collectaneum 16
      2.1 Historical Context 16
      2.2 Title and Genre 18
   3 The Pedagogical Function of the Collectaneum 23
      3.1 Servius 23
      3.2 Sedulius and Codex “(B)” 24
      3.3 The Seven Types of Circumstance 25
         i) Connections to Donatus and Servius within Sedulius’ Prologue 26
         ii) The History of the Septem Circumstantiae 30
         iii) Identifying Sedulius’ Sources for the Septem Circumstantiae 47
   3.4 Pedagogical Content 51
      i) Marginalia 51
      ii) References to Teachers and Students 52
      iii) Elementary Grammatical and Literary Topoi 57
      iv) Elementary Ecclesiastical and Theological Topoi 59
   4 Latinity 61
      4.1 Sedulius and Other Carolingian Pauline Commentators 61
      4.2 Hiberno-Latin Content and Diction 63
      4.3 Formatting 71
         i) Formula for Citation of Biblical Text 72
         ii) Formulae Used for Explaining 73
   4.4 Linguistic Style 82
      i) Multiple Constructions 83
      ii) Orthographical Matters 86
      iii) Simplification 87
   5 Theological and Ecclesiastical Issues 92
      5.1 Baptism 92
      5.2 Jewish-Christian Relations 96
      5.3 The Trinity and the Divinity of Christ 100
   6 Studies in Reception 106
      6.1 Sources 106
         i) Frede’s Apparatus Fontium 108
         ii) Method of Citation 109
      6.2 Introduction to the Reception of Jerome, Augustine, and Pelagius 111
      6.3 Reception of Jerome 113
         i) Reception of Jerome in the Prologue 114
         ii) Reception of Jerome in Galatians and Ephesians 121
6.4 Reception of Augustine

i) The Model for a Methodological Maneuver
   134
ii) Quotation of De Utilitate Credendi in Sedulius’ Prologue
   139
iii) Quotation of De Civitate Dei in Sedulius’ Commentary on Ephesians
   146

6.5 Reception of Pelagius within the Commentaries
   153

6.6 The Augustine and Pelagius Dynamic within the Commentaries
   157

i) Saeculum
   171
ii) Praefiguratio
   174
iii) Non Meis Meritis
   177
iv) Sola Fide
   179

II. Translations
   181

1 Intentions and Challenges of the Translations
   181
2 Biblical Text
   182
3 The Manuscripts, Text, and Formatting
   184
4 Translations
   186
   Prologue
   186
   On the Letter to the Galatians
   194
   On the Letter to the Ephesians
   221

III. Conclusion
   253
Appendix
   256
Bibliography
   262
Abbreviations

Works of Augustine

I follow the form of abbreviations and Latin titles as they appear in *Augustinus-Lexikon*, i. pp. xlii-xliv.

General Abbreviations

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Abbreviation</th>
<th>Description</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>A&amp;G</td>
<td>Allen and Greenough’s New Latin Grammar</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CC</td>
<td>Corpus Christianorum Series Latina</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CCCM</td>
<td>Corpus Christianorum Continuatio Mediaevalis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CLCLT</td>
<td>The CETEDOC Library of Christian Latin Texts</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CPG</td>
<td>Clavis Patrum Graecorum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>CSEL</td>
<td>Corpus Scriptorum Ecclesiasticorum Latinorum</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>L&amp;S</td>
<td>Lewis and Short, A Latin Dictionary</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>MGH</td>
<td>Monumenta Germaniae Historica</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>NPNF</td>
<td>Nicene and Post Nicene Fathers</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>PL</td>
<td>Patrologia Latina</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RLM</td>
<td>Rhetores Latini Minores, ed. C. Halm</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TDNT</td>
<td>Theological Dictionary of the New Testament</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>TLL</td>
<td>Thesaurus Linguae Latinae</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
Below are the authors and respective works used by Sedulius in his Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians. The abbreviations follow those of Hermann Josef Frede as used in the *apparatus fontium* and throughout his 1997 edition of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum in Apostolum*. A key to all of Frede’s abbreviations is found in the *Clavis Patrum Latinorum*, CC (ed. Dekkers), Brepols 1995, 831-854 and in Frede’s work entitled *Kirchenschriftsteller: Verzeichnis und Sigel*, Freiburg: Herder, 1995.

1

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>AUTHORS:</th>
<th>BOE</th>
<th>AMst</th>
<th>PEL</th>
<th>RUF</th>
<th>Thr</th>
<th>HI</th>
<th>BED</th>
<th>IS</th>
<th>AU</th>
<th>Car</th>
<th>Can</th>
<th>GR-M</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>WORKS:</td>
<td>Eut</td>
<td>Rm (pr)</td>
<td>Gal</td>
<td>Rm</td>
<td>Gal</td>
<td>ill</td>
<td>rat</td>
<td>sent</td>
<td>cred</td>
<td>Gal</td>
<td>co</td>
<td>Ev</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>---------</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>--------</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>------</td>
<td>-------</td>
<td>-----</td>
<td>----</td>
<td>-----</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>Eph</td>
<td>Eus</td>
<td>phlm</td>
<td>Dn</td>
<td>Q</td>
<td>nom</td>
<td>PROL</td>
<td>——Heb</td>
<td>——Paul</td>
<td>ep</td>
<td>Gal</td>
<td>Eph (pr)</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

2

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Prologue</th>
<th>Galatians</th>
<th>Ephesians</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Sed-S, Mt. pr.</td>
<td>PEL, Gal</td>
<td>PEL, Eph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>BOE, Eut</td>
<td>HI, Gal</td>
<td>HI, Eph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HI, ill</td>
<td>AU, Gal</td>
<td>Car, Eph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AMst, Rm</td>
<td>Ruf, Eus</td>
<td>AU, prae</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HI, Phlm</td>
<td>AU, ep</td>
<td>AU, ench</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HI, Dn</td>
<td>Car, Gal</td>
<td>PEL, Eph</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HI, q</td>
<td>AU, Fau</td>
<td>GR-M, Ev</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(HI) PROL, Paul</td>
<td>BED, rat</td>
<td>AU, Ps</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HI, nom</td>
<td>AU, gn li</td>
<td>AU, ci</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>RUF, Rm</td>
<td>AU, ench</td>
<td>AU, tri</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>(HI) PROL, Hbr</td>
<td>Thr, Gal</td>
<td>Can, in</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>HI, ep</td>
<td>Can, co</td>
<td>AU, Gn li</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>AU, cred</td>
<td>SED-S, misc</td>
<td>IS, sent</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>IS, ety</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>Can, co</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td></td>
<td>HI, Eph pr</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Clm and Wb. are both used throughout as well (cf. Frede, 1997, *44-*46).

- Clm 6235, 14277
- Wb. = glossae codicis Wurzburg M. p. th. F. 12
I. Introduction

1 General Introduction

In 1961, H.J. Frede published a critical edition of both the Prologus (the Prologue) to Sedulius Scottus’ Collectanea in Omnes B. Pauli Epistolas (the collection of commentaries on the “Pauline Corpus” of Epistles: Romans – Hebrews) and also from that collection the In Epistolam ad Effeseos (commentary on Ephesians) in his work Pelagius, der irische Paulustext, Sedulius Scottus. Over three decades later (1997) he published, in the Vetus Latina series, a critical text of the entire corpus of Sedulius Scottus’ Collectaneum on the Pauline epistles, and he entitled the two volume work, Sedulii Scotti Collectaneum in Apostolum (hereafter referred to simply as the Collectaneum). This critical text, published in 1997, is the one I refer to throughout and ultimately use for my translation of Sedulius’ Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians.

1.1 Aims

The aim of this project is to introduce and make accessible to English readers Sedulius Scottus’ Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians.1 McNally calls for such translation projects in the conclusion of his seminal work, The Bible in the Early Middle Ages.2 Sedulius’ work and context is of such a nature that this project should also prove useful for a number of other specific fields in the disciplines of classics, medieval history, and Christian biblical and theological studies.

---

1 The Prologue is one for Sedulius’ entire Collectaneum, and I refer to it as the Prologue throughout. Hereafter, I abbreviate my references to Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians as Gal and Eph respectively, but all other references, whether to the biblical letters themselves or another commentary on the letters, are not abbreviated. McNally, 1959, 76-77: “It is an earnest desire and hope of all workers in the field of early medieval theology that one day a series of translations, Medieval Christian Writers, may be inaugurated.”

2
Sedulius is an ideal candidate for an introduction and translation project for a number of reasons. First of all, he is widely acknowledged as one of the great scholars and literary persons of that age.\(^3\) Secondly, not only do we today recognize Sedulius’ importance, but he enjoyed a certain level of social prestige during his time as well. He served as a mainstream, orthodox writer who was appointed as one of the “chief ministers in the revival of learning and arts in Liège, the intellectual capital of Louis the German’s kingdom.”\(^4\) In Simpson’s introduction to Sedulius’ *Collectaneum Miscellaneum*, he cites evidence within that text which buttresses the speculation that Sedulius was active as a teacher in Liège.\(^5\) In fact, there are a number of works which are attributed to “Sedulius’ circle”, reinforcing the belief that he had a number of companions working with or under him during his scholarly pursuits around the region.\(^6\) Some have speculated that he even held the title *scholasticus* in Liège.\(^7\) Nora Chadwick claims, “we cannot doubt that many of the most important manuscripts known to have been written at the centres of Irish learning on the Continent contain Irish names which are those of monks recognized as having belonged to the circle of Sedulius.”\(^8\)

The Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians were chosen for multiple reasons. First of all, in his Prologue Sedulius quotes Jerome who nominates these two letters as two of the three that must particularly be read (8, 182-186, Frede),

Whence also Jerome says: I shall quote Paul the Apostle, because however often I read him, it seems to me, that I hear not words but thunderings. Read his letters, especially those to the Romans, Galatians, and Ephesians – in which Paul is totally engaged in dispute, and in whatever way you look there are thunderbolts. He sticks to his purpose,

\(^3\) I am not alone in my estimation of Sedulius’ importance and accomplishments in that age. See Simpson, XX; Lapidge, 283; Bieler, 116; Contreni, 1992, chapter IX, 762.
\(^4\) Doyle, 11. See also Lapidge, 283-284.
\(^5\) Simpson, XXII.
\(^6\) Traube first developed the theory of “the circle of Sedulius”, and it has been accepted by later writers too. See also Bieler, 124; Doyle, 15-16.
\(^7\) Doyle, 11.
\(^8\) Chadwick, 105.
seizes everything which he has touched, retreats so that he might overcome, simulates flight so that he might kill.

Secondly, these letters are some of the most studied and commented on by the patristic writers. To name a few, Marius Victorinus is the first known Latin commentator, and the only three extant commentaries from him are on Galatians, Ephesians and Philippians. Augustine’s only complete commentary on any Pauline letter is on Galatians. Jerome wrote full commentaries on only four Pauline letters: Philemon, Galatians, Ephesians and Titus. Therefore, because Galatians and Ephesians were popular letters on which to comment, it seems apt for purposes of this and future studies of Sedulius’ work to start with these. The Prologue is also important to include in a study like this, because it prefaces the whole Collectaneum and reveals Sedulius’ approach to interpreting Scripture, as the opening lines of the Prologue state (1, 1-3, Frede), “[b]efore we come to interpreting the apostolic words, let us first examine certain axioms, i.e., the main principles.”

1.2 Biography

The first wave of Viking attacks upon Ireland in 795 stimulated the pre-existing trend of Irish and Anglo-Saxon scholars immigrating to the Continent. In 830, the attacks worsened and the Norsemen continued to plague the northern Irish until a decisive victory over the Vikings in 867, but it was not until 1014 that the Vikings were expelled. These two-hundred plus years of battle and subjugation generated a large influx of Irish immigrants into the Carolingian empire, where they were usually welcomed and valued for their learning. In this period Ireland saw the emigration of her scholars, poets, theologians and political consultants who would

---

9 Plumer, 6.
10 All dates are C.E., unless otherwise noted.
11 Bieler, 117.
indelibly impact the Carolingian empire. Sedulius was one of these Irish immigrants and he stands as one of the more accomplished writers in the Carolingian empire of the ninth century. We can date his arrival to Liège between the dates of 840 and 851, because he addressed some of his poems to Bishop Hartgar – whose first year as Bishop was 840 – and others to the Emperor’s wife, Irmengard, who died in 851. His poems also indicate that he migrated with some fellow Irish monks, and that they were greeted warmly by Bishop Hartgar with whom Sedulius in particular enjoyed both a close professional and personal relationship. Sedulius never says why he and his comrades left Ireland, but their departure was most likely due to the above discussed Viking attacks upon Ireland. The constant barrage of pillaging and warfare must have been frustrating for Sedulius, who undoubtedly sought a more quiet life. Many Irish folk went before him and assuredly he was aware of the serene life available in the Carolingian empire, which Alcuin described, “[o] how sweet life was when we used to sit at leisure among the portfolios of a learned man, among an abundance of books, and among the venerable thoughts of the Fathers; nothing was lacking that was needed for religious life and the pursuit of knowledge.” Sedulius found such a life under Bishop Hartgar and went on to enjoy an illustrious career as a scholar and poet. In fact, his talent in writing poetry eventually won him the position as “chief bard” of Liège.

The dates and places of composition of Sedulius’ works are points of debate; however, the consensus is that the following complete list of his works was mostly composed on the

---

12 Doyle, 9.
13 Cf. poems 1, 3, 5, 6, 7, 17 (tr. Doyle).
14 McKitterick, 1983, 299; Doyle, 11.
16 Doyle, 11.
continent (though some seem to have been partially drafted in Ireland before his migration) in and around Liège between 840 and 874, which is the last known date of Sedulius: a commentary on the grammatical tracts of Eutyches and Priscian, a *Collectaneum* on the Pauline epistles as well as one on Matthew, a *Collectaneum* of excerpts from classical authors, *Proverbia Graecorum*, numerous poems now collected and translated by Doyle, and *De rectoribus Christianis* (also known as “A Mirror for Princes”), which is also translated by Doyle in the same volume as the poems.

This prolific output of literary work and the works themselves teach us a few things about Sedulius as a scholar and person. First of all, he was industrious and erudite. The titles alone suggest a vast breadth of reading and learning, and the contents do not disappoint. His poetry is laden with classical and biblical references, and his knowledge of Greek was beyond most of his contemporaries.

There was an early misconception regarding the level of Greek learning held by the Irish, which has plagued medievalists for some time. It was long thought that they were competent Hellenists; however, thanks to scholars such as Esposito and Laistner the confusion is largely dispelled. Most of the Irish immigrants to the Continent, during the eighth and ninth centuries did not know Greek. Some of them seemed to know the alphabet and even common phrases, but that was the extent of their knowledge.

In this area, Sedulius is one of the known exceptions. My own studies of Sedulius’ Prologue and commentaries do not prove that his knowledge of

---

17 Simpson, XXIII.
19 Doyle, 16-17.
20 See poem 2 (tr. Doyle) where Sedulius likens Christ to a more compassionate Apollo.
21 Laistner, 240. Laistner in *Thought and Letters in Western Europe, A.D. 500 to 900* dedicates a chapter to “The Study of Greek”. Esposito too in his collected essays entitled, *Latin Learning in Mediaeval Ireland* (ed. Lapidge) dedicates a chapter to “Greek in Ireland during the Middle Ages”. This chapter (184-203) not only covers the learning of Greek in Ireland, but that of Irishmen who came to the continent with special reference to Sedulius Scottus and Johannes Scottus Eriugena.
Greek was anything beyond the common Graecisms found in Latin at the time, nor does he seem to make any linguistic contributions beyond Jerome’s own work; however, there is sufficient evidence in his other works and from what we know about the schools at Liège (i.e., Sedulius is believed to have taught there, where the study of Greek was active) and other centers west of the Rhine to justify naming Sedulius as one of a few who was competent in Greek.

Regarding personal traits, little is known as Sedulius’ poems do not disclose many self-referential facts. But, one personality trait that does shine through is a congenial spirit and sense of humor. This is seen not only in his poetry, which reveals happy times for Sedulius and his comrades as he jokingly writes about beer, food, and feasting, but also in his Collectaneum. Sedulius’ defense of a sense of humor is revealed in his selection of Jerome’s exegesis for Eph 5:4 (“and there must be no filthiness or silly talk, or coarse jesting, which are not fitting, but rather giving of thanks.”). Overall, the exposition of this verse venerates the mournful attitude of a pious man, but one gleans from the following excerpt that Sedulius is sympathetic to those with a sense of humor (588, XXI.5-589, XXI.11, Frede):

There is the following difference between ‘silly talk’ and ‘scurrility’, in that ‘silly talk’ contains in it nothing wise or worthy of the human heart, but ‘scurrility’ descends from a wise mind and from mature reflection aims at certain urbane or rustic or shameful or facetious words, which we can call humorous by another word, so that it may cause the listeners to laugh.

More than anything else, the Collectaneum on the Pauline epistles reveals Sedulius’ acute knowledge and understanding of the patristic writers and beyond. A cursory reading of

---

22 These are common traits found in other Hiberno-Latin commentaries that Esposito warns against using as proof for a knowledge of Greek. He makes two salient points specifically on this matter and Sedulius (1988, 196-198): 1) “We must be very careful to avoid invoking, by a common anachronism, the ninth century learning of a Sedulius or of a Johannes Scottus, and regarding it as a characteristic of this period (from sixth century to 800).” 2) “This affectation of employing Greek letters is common to Irish and Anglo-Saxon scribes in the eighth and ninth centuries. It cannot be taken as evidence of knowledge of the Greek language.”
23 Laistner, 244.
24 Cf. poem 9 (tr. Doyle).
25 Cf. especially poem 32 (tr. Doyle).
26 This and all other quotations of Scripture in English are taken from the New American Standard Bible.
Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* may primarily suggest that it represents a simple cut and paste method of editorship from other commentaries, but as this study shows, he exhibits a keen mind in his clever ability to summarize large portions of writing into only a few lines while retaining their theological import. Also, Sedulius does not draw solely from commentaries, but from a wide range of authors and genres further demonstrating his extensive learning. Some of the works outside of commentaries that he uses for content are Augustine’s, *civ.*,\(^{27}\) *util. cred.*,\(^ {28}\) Bede’s *De temporum ratione*,\(^ {29}\) and Rufinus’ translation of Eusebius’ *Histories*\(^ {30}\) et al. Likewise, Sedulius exhibits a familiarity with classical models that include an Aristotelian/Ciceronian trope – the seven circumstances – and the commentary of the preeminent Virgilian scholar Servius, whose work Sedulius used as a literary model for the composition of his *Collectaneum*.

\(^{27}\) Eph 4:13 (580, XV.28- 582, XV.59, Frede).
\(^{28}\) Prologue 200–229 (9-10, Frede).
\(^{29}\) Gal 3:17 (528, III.159- 529, III.174, Frede).
\(^{30}\) Gal 1:19 (517, II.48-54, Frede).
2 Historical Context and Genre of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*

2.1 Historical Context

In order to discuss the historical context of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*, the time and place of its composition must first be noted. Frede convincingly argues in his introduction to the critical text that Sedulius worked on and finished the *Collectaneum* in St. Gall during the second half of the ninth century and certainly before the end of the century.\(^{31}\) He comes to this conclusion for two main reasons. First, St. Gall housed many of the manuscripts that Sedulius used as sources, most notably manuscript 88 of the Stiftsbibliothek and the Sangallensis 101, which is the manuscript containing the work which Sedulius cites as Ambrose. Manuscript 88 of the Stiftsbibliothek carries considerable weight in Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*; it is the manuscript version of Rufinus’ translation of Origen, the source used most in Sedulius’ commentary on the epistle to the Romans, which is roughly as long as his commentaries on First Corinthians through Hebrews combined.\(^{32}\) Secondly, Frede traced the dissemination point of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* back to St. Gall. Frede concedes that Sedulius likely worked on the *Collectaneum* in other centers as well, such as Würzburg, which houses the manuscript Frede labels as “Wb”.\(^{33}\) It contains Irish scholarship that Sedulius used in the *Collectaneum*. To these suggestions I offer Liège as another likely center where Sedulius probably worked on his *Collectaneum*, simply because we know that he lived there for a time and was active in many capacities, and because he composed much of his *Collectaneum Miscellaneum* there as well.\(^{34}\)

\(^{31}\) Frede, 1997, 41*.

\(^{32}\) Frede, 1997, 41*-42*.

\(^{33}\) The “Paulus-Handschrift Würzburg, Universitätsbibliothek M.” Frede, 1997, 44*.

\(^{34}\) Simpson, XXIII; though see also Frede, 1997, 34*, who claims Sedulius did at least some of the work on the *Collectaneum Miscellaneum* in Lorsch and Murbach.
While the term “renaissance” is not universally accepted as a description for the Carolingian age, that it was a time of reform and renewal is not questioned. Charlemagne, king of the Franks for 47 years beginning in 768, expanded his kingdom into an empire encompassing most of western and central Europe. He used the infrastructure of the Church to implement a Christian culture of reform and revival. Giles Brown defines what he terms the “Carolingian Renaissance” as “the revival of learning in conjunction with a movement to reform both the institutions of the Church and the lives of the Christian peoples living under the Carolingian rule.”

Transformation of religion, law, government and learning within the Carolingian empire was achieved through a concerted commitment, directed by Charlemagne and his successors, to the study and use of the written word, and particularly, the production and study of the Bible. This led to a scholarly culture of compiling, copying, and producing Christian materials. Scriptoria and monastic libraries developed an interdependence for the provision of manuscripts. Furthermore, centers across the empire communicated and shared resources. The concerted effort among these centers allowed Sedulius to draw from a wide range of sources.

Though previous generations had sought to establish programs of education for the purpose of advancing Christian understanding, the Carolingian administrators were the first to consistently apply the legislation. However concerted and expansive these ambitious goals were, they were not prosecuted without hindrance. As one would expect, creating an educated,

35 Cf. Chazelle and Edwards (9), who claim that Carolingian renovatio is now the preferred term against Carolingian renaissance. McKitterick, Sullivan, Brown and Contreni, all used the term, but Contreni (1992, Chapter V, 71) and Sullivan (Introduction to Gentle Voices, 5) are both quick to note the term is not without its detractors.
36 Brown, 1.
38 McKitterick, 1983, 203.
40 Contreni, 1992, chapter V, 74-75.
41 Brown, 1-46; Smalley, 37-46; McKitterick, 1983, particularly chapters 2-8; Sullivan, 53-59.
unified Christian society in an expanding empire with a high number of immigrants made discord the norm. Cultural barriers and the lack of a universally spoken language were challenging obstacles to the conversion and education of newly dominated peoples. Naturally, an empire of such a diverse character, with nonetheless unifying aims, necessitated the teaching and understanding of the fundamental aspects of Christianity. Thus, although certain authors may have attained a high level of erudition, they nonetheless often wrote at an elementary level.

2.2 Title and Genre

Frede titles his critical edition, *Sedulii Scotti Collectaneum in Apostolum*, a title that is similar to the one which appears in the Fulda manuscript “W”. This title departs from the one used in the *editio princeps*, published by Johannes Sichardus (Basle, 1528): *Sedulii Scoti Hy/bernensis, in omnes epi/stolas Pauli collectaneum*. Migne in 1851, for the *Patrologia Latina*, copied Sichardus’ title, which became the standard text for Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* until Frede’s critical edition of 1997. All three titles contain the word *Collectaneum*, a term which is instructive with respect to Sedulius’ work and purpose.

In literary terms, a *collectaneum* is a collection of edited excerpts, usually from various authors and works, blended to some degree with the compiler’s own comments. *Collectanea* of this sort are often referred to as *florilegia*. Rochais classified *florilegia* into two broad categories: Classical *florilegia*, which are *collectanea* of classical authors (Sedulius’

---

43 Sullivan, 78-79.
44 Sullivan, 53-59.
45 Fulda, Hessische Landesbibliothek Aa 30, saec. XII (Frede, 1997, 60*).
Collectaneum Miscellaneum is a medieval example of this category), and Christian florilegia. He then subdivides Christian florilegia into five types, chaînes exégétiques, florilèges dogmatiques, collections canoniques, recueils liturgiques, and florilèges ascétiques. Sedulius’ Collectaneum falls into the category of chaînes exégétiques or exegetical chains.

Early Christian councils served as an impetus for the production of summaries on authoritative Christian writings on specific doctrines, a forerunner to medieval collectanea of patristic sources: for example, the summaries that were used at the council of Ephesus in 431, the council of Chalcedon in 451, and the fifth General Council in 551. Then at the sixth General Council in 680, two florilegia, and not mere summaries, were produced for opposing views on the issue of Monothelites. Rochais dates the Liber Scintillarum by Defensor of Ligugé, one of the earliest examples of moral florilegia, to about 700. Around the same time, Bede (ca. 672-735) composed his Collectaneum in apostolum ex operibus Augustini. This work is Bede’s attempt to collect all of Augustine’s exegetical comments on the Pauline letters. It certainly differs from later collectanea on patristic exegesis by virtue of its exclusive interest in Augustine’s select exegesis and not the treatment of multiple authorities on entire books of the Bible. Bede’s Collectaneum nonetheless signals an early practice of compiling and excerpting authoritative exegesis on Scripture.

It is from this tradition that the Carolingians began creating their own collectanea, a genre that, under the practice of the Carolingians, exhibits new developments and uses. After the production of Bibles and liturgical texts, which were used in the attempt to standardize worship

---

46 Rochais, 1953, 247-248. McKitterick, (1977) follows these categories throughout her seminal work on Carolingian florilèges ascétiques or “moral florilegia”.
47 Rochais, 1953, 248-249.
48 Oestreicci, 121.
49 Oestreicci, 121.
50 Rochais (1953, 251) dates the work to the last decades of the seventh century (C’est dans les dernières décades du VII siècle que Defensor compose son Liber Scintillarum), but this date is pushed back when he edits the critical text for the CC (vol. 117) edition (1957, 117).
and ensure solidarity in an extremely diverse empire, the preeminent literary genre of the Carolingian age was the biblical commentary.\(^{51}\)

The impetus for the bulk of Carolingian biblical commentaries was the education of patrons: namely, emperors, bishops, nuns and even laymen and laywomen.\(^{52}\) A common feature of these commissioned commentaries was their request for as many Fathers as possible, thus taking the form of florilegia.\(^{53}\) The Carolingian commentators, to varying degrees largely depending on the availability of sources, often blended their own comments with those of the Fathers, a practice that required judiciousness and acute editorial skills.\(^{54}\) Some of the most prominent authors in the Carolingian empire from 800 - 850 wrote commentaries, using the Fathers as sources in the same way that Sedulius did: namely, Alcuin, Rhabanus Maurus, Haimo of Auxerre and John Scottus, a fellow Irishman. Claudius of Turin (fl. 810 - 827), for example, foreseeing the possible criticism that his excerpts were contradictory or even misrepresented his sources, noted in the margins the name of the source from which he excerpted and defended the practice as inherited by Bede.\(^{55}\) The process of compiling, excerpting, and simplifying earlier writers’ works into clear, simple Latin drew many comparisons, such as that of a medic who draws from many plants for one medicine, or that of an organ with many pipes producing one harmonious sound.\(^{56}\) To bring the production of Carolingian biblical commentaries into proper comparison with Sedulius, I offer Contreni, who has done extensive scholarly work on

\(^{51}\) Brown, 34; Contreni (2002, 29) notes that from the time of Charlemagne in the eighth century through the end of the ninth century, Carolingians produced around two-hundred biblical commentaries.

\(^{52}\) Contreni, 1992, chapter V, 87.

\(^{53}\) Contreni, 1992, chapter V, 84-85, 90.

\(^{54}\) Contreni, 1992, chapter V, 85-89.

\(^{55}\) MGH Epp. 4:592, 14-17: *Et ne ab aliquibus praesumptor et temerarius diiudicarer, quod ab alieno armario sumpserim tela, unitiuscuisque doctoris nomen cum suis characteribus, sicut et beatus fecit presbiter Beda subter in paginis adnotavi.* (Lest I be judged as a reckless or rash borrower, because I took arrows from an alien quiver, I beneath noted the name of each teacher with his own initials on the pages just as the blessed elder Bede did.) Cf. Contreni, 1992, chapter V, 81, 89, n. 67.

\(^{56}\) Contreni, 1992, chapter V, 88-89.
Carolingian biblical exegesis, both in survey and specific studies. He summarizes the period thus,

The first generation of Carolingian exegetes in the 780s and 790s favored encyclopedic commentaries based on earlier florilegia of patristic and early medieval authors. Wigbod’s Genesis commentary and Peter of Pisa’s comments on Daniel represent the contributions of this generation. A second generation writing roughly in the period of the 820s through the 840s confronted the patristic and early medieval legacy directly when it composed anthology commentaries based on careful excerpting and juxtaposition of the authorities. The important work of Hrabanus Maurus exemplifies this generation’s contribution. By the mid-ninth century a third generation had already begun to comment on the Bible in a new style. Angelomus of Luxeuil, John Scottus, Paschasius Radbertus, and Haimo of Auxerre, among others, blended patristic exegesis with their own grammatical, philosophical, or theological learning to create commentaries in which the imprint of the exegete and the biblical text itself became more apparent.\(^{57}\)

When we compare Sedulius to the most prominent of his immediate contemporaries, such as the Irishman John Scottus or Haimo of Auxerre, we find that Sedulius’ work contains less original exegesis; however, that does not imply a judgment on Sedulius’ skill as an editor and compiler within his own Collectaneum. Actually, it asserts his orthodoxy and reverence for earlier Christian authorities, which was expected of Carolingian commentators. Too much original assertion was met with critique by peers, such as occurred between Florus of Lyons and John Scottus.\(^{58}\) McKitterick goes so far as to describe the Carolingian commentators as bending over backwards not to be original.\(^{59}\) It is in this tradition and contemporary practice of collecting and editing patristic biblical exegesis, blended with some of his own comments, that Sedulius composes his Collectaneum in Apostolum.

Frede notes in his introduction to the critical text, leaning on Brunhölzl and Bischoff, that Sedulius departed from typical Irish exegetical methods in his Collectaneum by consulting the

\(^{57}\) Contreni, 2002, 29-30.
\(^{58}\) Contreni, 1992, chapter V, 82, especially n. 36.
This assertion leads Frede to investigate what served as Sedulius’ influence and motivation. Again turning to Bischoff, Frede suggests that the *Liber Glossarum*, commissioned by Charlemagne (742-814), and later the Bible *Catena*, a project initiated by Louis the Pious, both served as trendsetters for future Carolingian exegesis, despite the fact that neither of the said works was completed or widely circulated. Frede, following Bischoff, then offers the following evaluation of Sedulius’ method,

> He takes up the new method of the Carolingian renaissance in order to communicate through a direct appeal to the sources the explanations of the Fathers on the individual verses of the Bible, by quoting them literally and naming his source. ‘Thus with the work of the theologian Sedulius Scottus – whose work concludes, in the middle of the ninth century, the older exegetical literature of the Irish – many of the weaknesses of the pre and early Carolingian Irish exegesis are overcome.’

Frede and Bischoff may be correct regarding the implications of the *Liber Glossarum* and the Bible *Catene* upon Carolingian biblical exegesis, i.e., that the two mandated projects added to the visibility and/or the popularity of the “glossing” and “collecting” formats for producing biblical and theological texts; however, Frede fails to identify Sedulius’ most important influence with respect to structure and purpose: Servius’ commentary on the *Aeneid*. 

---

60 Frede, 1997, 35*.
61 Frede, 1997, 35*.
62 Frede, 1997, 35*-37*.
3 The Pedagogical Function of the Collectaneum

3.1 Servius

This chapter proposes that Sedulius’ Collectaneum employs Servius’ commentary on the Aeneid as its literary model, an association that secures the conclusion that Sedulius’ Collectaneum functioned as a classroom commentary. At the end of the fourth century, when the Imperial system was under duress and the educational system was experiencing decline, Servius utilized the earliest Virgilian commentators and ancient Latin writers to compose his magisterial commentary, which is singularly pedagogical.\(^\text{64}\) Servius’ commentary became the quintessential classroom commentary for the study of the Aeneid from the early through the later Middle Ages.\(^\text{65}\) His method of selecting and editing his sources gives his work a “clear simplicity which characterizes the great and successful teacher,”\(^\text{66}\) and likely contributes to the commentary’s wide circulation throughout the insular regions and the Continent during the Carolingian era. In the margins of the large, square Carolingian manuscripts containing Virgil’s Aeneid, one often finds a full text of Servius: to know one was most likely to know the other.\(^\text{67}\)

Sedulius’ life as a poet and scholar who was born and trained in Ireland and then lived and worked in the Carolingian empire is reasonable proof for suggesting a familiarity with Servius’ renowned commentary, given its wide circulation and popularity in both locations. His self assignment as the “Virgil of Liège” also buttresses the conjecture; in poem 7.17-20, Sedulius writes, Sedulie, assum: aue, tu Mosae filius amnis, tu Maro Leodii Musigenumque comes (“Be well, Sedulius, son of the river Meuse, Virgil of Liège, and comrade of the Muses.”). That reference alone does not unequivocally establish Sedulius as one familiar with Servius’ work on

\(^{64}\) Baswell, 49-50.
\(^{65}\) Baswell, 49.
\(^{66}\) Goold, 115.
\(^{67}\) Baswell, 50. See, e.g. MS Paris, B.N., lat 10307.
the *Aeneid*; nevertheless, a number of identifiable links to the work confirm the supposition: 1) Sedulius as the likely penman of a Servian manuscript; 2) Sedulius’ application of the seven types of circumstance; and 3) similarities in matters of Latinity.68

### 3.2 Sedulius and Codex “(B)”

In 1921, St Andrews University Publications produced a facsimile of Codex “(B)” (as it is called in the manuscript tradition of Servius’ commentary on the *Aeneid*).69 Ten years later Savage published an article in which he drew attention to the wealth of historical information contained in the margins of this manuscript. In these margins where the names of people in Sedulius’ circle appear, Sedulius Scottus’ own name occurs 225 times.70 This codex was deemed a *vade mecum* of an Irish scholar whose itinerary included Liège and Lorsch amongst other known stops of Sedulius.71 By 1934, in his article “The Manuscripts of Servius's Commentary on Virgil”, Savage suggested Sedulius Scottus as the scribe of this manuscript, citing extensive internal evidence, but most notably the numerous occurrences of his name and the cities within the Carolingian empire where Sedulius was known to have lived and worked.72 Murgia’s 1975 exhaustive publication of his investigations of the manuscripts of Servius and *Servius auctus* offers no substantive corrections to Savage’s findings regarding this manuscript, except the suggestion that it “is probably dated not much later than the mid-ninth century, rather than *saec. IX ex.*”73 An earlier dating to the middle of the ninth century coincides with Sedulius’ known dates in Liège (841-860). Yet, there is further evidence that links Sedulius to this Servian

---

68 The chapter below on Latinity further discusses the links between Sedulius and Servius with special respect to *formulae*, structure and formatting.
70 Savage, 1931, 407-408.
71 Savage, 1931, 408.
72 Savage, 1931, 407-411.
73 Murgia, 38.
manuscript. The following study of the *septem circumstantiae* as a template for Sedulius’ Prologue will develop these additional connections.

### 3.3 The Seven Types of Circumstance

Sedulius’ Prologue is written in 229 lines of continuous prose, and it covers what he refers to as the *VII species circumstantiae* (“the seven types of circumstance”). Sedulius writes in the opening lines of his Prologue, “[b]efore we come to interpreting the apostolic words, let us first examine certain axioms, i.e., the main principles. In the first place, therefore, it must be known that there are seven types of peristasis, i.e., of circumstance, without which no questions are asked, no arguments are investigated, and no art or work can stand.”\(^74\) He proceeds to list the seven types of circumstance and then uses them as a template for an historical introduction to his Pauline corpus (Romans to Hebrews). At the very least, Sedulius’ use of the seven circumstances reveals a pedagogical impulse in the tradition of classical schoolroom commentaries, which typically introduce a text through the use of what scholars have broadly identified as one of three *accessus* schemas: 1) model of Donatus / Servius, 2) the *septem circumstantiae* or “rhetorical circumstances”, and 3) the late medieval *accessus ad auctores*.\(^75\) Though neither Donatus nor Servius explicitly mention the *septem circumstantiae*, I will demonstrate through a number of intertextual and external links to these texts that Sedulius, nonetheless, used Donatus and Servius as the model for producing this pedagogical Prologue.

\(^{74}\) Prologue 1-6 (1, Frede): *Antequam ad apostolica verba exponenda veniamus, quaedam prius axiomata hoc est principalia documenta praelibemus. Inprimis itaque illud sciendum est quod VII species sunt peristasios id est circumstantiae, sine quibus nullae quaestiones proponuntur nulla argumenta tractantur nullaque ars aut opus constare potest.*

i) Connections to Donatus and Servius within Sedulius’ Prologue

The first intertextual link between the prefaces of Servius and Sedulius is found in the opening line for each: Servius writes, *In exponendis auctoribus haec consideranda sunt…* (“These things must be considered to explain authors…”); Sedulius writes, *Antequam ad apostolic verba exponenda veniamus, quaedam prius axiomata, hoc est principalia documenta, praelibemus.* As a matter of introduction, both authors assert that an examination of certain circumstances must precede textual interpretation. The two operative words in Servius’ sentence are *exponere* and *considerare*. Sedulius likewise employs *exponere* and uses the synonym *praelibare* for *considerare*. *Praelibare* is not a typical synonym for *considerare*; however, the probability that it here serves as a synonym is confirmed in Sedulius’ conclusion to the Prologue, where he specifically offers *praelibatis* as a synonym for *consideratis*: *His itaque VII circumstantiis consideratis vel praelibatis…*

The next intertextual link is found in Sedulius’ lines 4-6, specifically in the phrase, *ars aut opus*. Sedulius writes, *id est circumstantiae, sine quibus nullae questiones proponuntur, nulla argumenta traxantur nullaque ars aut opus constare potest*. Sedulius here provides typical contexts within which the circumstances are employed. The *questiones* may refer to their appearance in question-and-answer dialogues common in all disciplines, and/or perhaps to an early practice in which priests used them to judge the severity of confessors’ crimes and prescribe an appropriate penitence, a practice later mandated by the twenty-first canon of the Fourth Lateran Council. The “investigation of arguments” likely refers to their employment in

---

76 I do not offer translations for the longer quotations of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* within the Introduction, because they are provided below.
78 Cf. Robertson, 6.
both philosophical and forensic contexts. The third category, *ars aut opus*, is likely a literary expression applied specifically to poetry; the use of the *circumstantiae* in that context is therefore probably an indirect reference to Donatus’ *Vita* and/or Servius’ preface to his *Aeneid* commentary. This supposition is reinforced by Sedulius’ poetry where he uses the term *ars* to refer to poetry, especially Virgil’s. For example, in poem 7.43-44 Sedulius writes: *Nam mihi fas fuerat Laciores cernere terras, / quis meus altiloquus floruit arte Maro* (“For it was good for me to see the Latin lands, where my eloquent Virgil flourished in poetry.”). Similarly, in 35.7-8 Sedulius writes: *arte Maroneas uincit tua pagina Musas, fistola Nasonis qua resonante silet* (“Your poem surpasses the Virgilian Muses in skill / and Ovid’s pipe is silenced by your singing.”). For Sedulius, Virgil was the preeminent Latin poet, and the most prominent commentaries on Virgil, those of Donatus and Servius, contained prefaces which addressed seven questions about the author and work(s) that their commentary treated. Thus, I will show that Sedulius makes no distinction between his use of the *septem circumstantiae* and the *accessus* that governs Donatus’ *Vita*, which is subsequently reemployed by Servius. This is achieved in three steps: first, by demonstrating that Sedulius was familiar with Donatus’ commentary on Virgil; secondly, by noting a reference to Donatus in Sedulius’ work *Tractatus in Donati Artem minorem*; and thirdly, by demonstrating how Donatus’ and Servius’ seven *topoi* in their *accessus* are directly accounted for in Sedulius’ presentation of the *septem circumstantiae*.

Savage argued that Aelius Donatus’ commentaries on Virgil were still extant in the ninth century. He takes particular notice of a marginal comment by the penman of MS (B),

This marginal note reads as follows (f. 41b): *Donatus alter qui in totum Virgilium exposuit in Leotica*. This may be translated: ‘The Donatus alluded to here as a Virgil-commentator is not the well known Donatus [i.e., Tiberius Claudius Donatus], but a

---

second Donatus, who wrote a commentary on the Eclogues and Georgics, as well as on the Aeneid. There is a manuscript of his commentary at Liège.\textsuperscript{80}

According to Savage, the Donatus mentioned must be Aelius Donatus, who composed the \textit{Vita Vergilii} as a prologue to his commentaries. With this evidence and other detailed arguments, Savage concludes that Liège housed the Donatus commentaries in the middle of the 9\textsuperscript{th} century, and that the writer of this manuscript, who he claims is likely Sedulius Scottus, was familiar with those commentaries.

Evidence in Sedulius’ work, \textit{Tractatus in Donati Artem minorem} (hereafter \textit{Tract.}), also suggests that he recognized a version of the \textit{septem circumstantiae} in Donatus’ \textit{Vita}. The initial lines of Sedulius’ \textit{Tract.} introduce the seven circumstances; immediately after listing and defining each \textit{species circumstantiae}, Sedulius writes (line 25): \textit{Operatrix igitur persona huius artis proprio nomine Donatus} (“The creative employer, therefore, of this trope is our particular Donatus.”). Given the pervasive appearance of this rhetorical trope throughout Latin rhetoricians, it is not likely that \textit{operatrix persona} would have been attributed to Donatus for his treatment of this tool in a grammar. Sedulius could have named any number of \textit{rhetores} who discuss the circumstances in their rhetorical writings, most notably Cicero. This description seems to imply that he understands Donatus’ work as a creative employment of the seven circumstances, a novelty that Sedulius’ presentation of the \textit{septem circumstantiae} should reflect.

The \textit{Vita} of Donatus provides a treatment of the life of Virgil followed by an introduction to Virgil’s poetry; however, only a portion of his comments on the Eclogues, which he examines first, are extant. Donatus provides his schema after concluding his discussion of Virgil’s life.\textsuperscript{81}

\begin{quote}
Quoniam de auctore summatim diximus, de ipso carmine iam dicendum est, quod bifariam tractari solet, id est ante opus et in ipso opere. Ante opus titulus causa intentio. Titulus, in quo quaeritur, cuius sit, quid sit; causa, unde ortum sit et quare hoc
\end{quote}

\textsuperscript{80} Savage, 1934, 191; cf. Savage, 1931, 409.

\textsuperscript{81} Donatus, \textit{Commentarii in Eclogas}, 1.1-2.
potissimum sibi ad scribendum poeta praesumpserit; intentio, in qua cognoscitur, quid efficere conetur poeta. In ipso opere sane tria spectantur: numerus ordo explanatio.

Since we have spoken summarily about the author, now we must speak about the poetry itself, which is usually treated in two parts: i.e., before the work, and within the work itself. Before the work, there is the title, the cause, and the intention. The title, in which it is sought, whose it is and what it is; the cause, its origin and, in particular, why the poet ventured to write it; the intention, in which it is discerned what the poet attempted to achieve. Within the work itself, three things are generally observed: the number [of the books], the order [of the books], and its articulation.

Servius applies this model to his preface, changing the topic of *causa* to *qualitas*, but otherwise retaining the same terminology and order of *topoi*. Servius’ introductory comment is not only much shorter, but he omits Donatus’ distinction between “before the work and within the work”:

In exponendis auctoribus haec consideranda sunt: poetae vita, titulus operis, qualitas carminis, scribentis intentio, numerus librorum, ordo librorum, explanatio.

These things must be considered to explain authors: life of the poet, title of the work, quality of the poem, intention of writing, number of books, articulation. 82

These *topoi*, represented in Donatus’ and Servius’ prefaces, are directly addressed under the rubric of the *septem circumstantiae* in Sedulius’ Prologue.

Like Donatus and Servius, Sedulius treats the *vita poetae*, or *quis* for Sedulius, at greatest length. Next, Sedulius discusses the *quid*, which, under this rubric, includes the title of Paul’s letters as well as their order and number (Prologue, 68-70, 88-89):

Hactenus de persona dictum est, nunc de re vel facto quae est secundaria circumstania quaedam disseramus. Rem itaque vel factum quatuordecim epistolatarum opus intellegimus… Et quoniam de numero epistolatarum diximus, quaedam de ipsarum quoque ordine consequenter exponamus.

Sedulius’ third circumstance is *causa*, which corresponds with the Donatus’ and Servius’ *intentio*. Donatus and Servius discuss the time and place of Virgil’s writing within the *vita poetae*, but Sedulius discusses these matters as separate circumstances, the fourth and fifth respectively. The two remaining *topoi* in Servius’ preface are *qualitas* and *explanatio*, which are

---

precisely Sedulius’ last two circumstances. The sixth circumstance is also named *qualitas*, but
the seventh is named *materia*. Sedulius equates *materia* with the themes in the letters,

> Tot enim sunt materiae singularum epistololarum quot titulis singulae quaeque
> praenotantur epistolae, verbi gratia de virginibus, de viduis, de episcopis, de presbiteris,
> et reliqua quae singulatim prolium est numerare.

Sedulius’ understanding of *materia* seemingly derives from Servius’ discussion of *explanatio*:

> *sicut nunc dicturi thema proponimus* (“just as now we propose to discuss the theme”).

Although Donatus and Servius do not explicitly claim to employ the *septem circumstantiae*, Sedulius nonetheless orders their *topoi* under the rubric of the *septem circumstantiae*. Przychocki (1911) first suggested a connection between Servius’ prologue to Virgil and the *septem circumstantiae*, a point which has since been contested and supported.84 This study strengthens Przychocki’s conjecture by arguing that at least Sedulius intended his employment of the *septem circumstantiae* to be related to the work of Donatus and Servius as evidenced by the verbal parallels throughout and the use of identical *topoi*.

**ii) The History of the Septem Circumstantiae**

While Sedulius used the seven circumstances to present similar material as found in Donatus’ and Servius’ preface, there is still the question of his sources for the explicit use of the *circumstantiae*. Throughout the Prologue, Sedulius often cites the source for his information, though no citation is provided for his use of the seven types of circumstance. In light of its long history and frequent employment, especially in rhetorical circles, it may be that Sedulius did not

---

deem it necessary to cite any one of a number of rhetoricians who had mentioned them in their respective handbooks on rhetoric. ⁸⁵

In his introduction to the critical text, Frede identifies the seven circumstances as an Irish grammatical tool and concedes their importance as an element of the Prologue. However, regarding the issues of the schema’s history and possible source, he concludes: “in unserer Ausgabe bleiben diese Eintragungen unberücksichtigt.”⁸⁶ Due to the schema’s considerable importance for Sedulius, I will here trace its development in medieval rhetorical circles and relate how Sedulius’ employment of this trope is a reworking of specific medieval rhetores, and in so doing I will identify another link between Sedulius and the Servian manuscript, Codex (B).

What Sedulius referred to as the seven types of circumstance was first listed in a philosophical context by Aristotle (384-322 B.C.E.).⁸⁷ He begins book three of his Nicomachean Ethics by claiming that an act is only deemed virtuous or shameful when the agent performing an act is doing so voluntarily. Therefore, according to Aristotle, defining the difference between

---

⁸⁵ After the completion of this study, I found an article by D.W. Robertson, “A Note on the Classical Origin of ‘Circumstances’ in the Medieval Confessional”, in: Studies in Philology, vol. 43, No. 1 (1946), 6-14. I am gratified to have found this article as it confirms the basic trajectory of occurrences that I had independently taken. In this brief, eight page article he traces the use of the seven types of circumstance as a schema which became known to him through their appearance as a set of questions in the “famous twenty first canon of the Fourth Lateran Council of 1215,” which serves to assist confessors as they seek to judge the severity of crimes and “administer suitable remedies.” My work offers the following important differences: 1) I offer a more detailed analysis, 2) I trace their history back to Aristotle, whereas he thought it originated with Hermagoras of Temnos (first century BC), 3) I identify and demonstrate this schema as occurring in Augustine’s util. cred. and conf. (an important point of justification for its use in an exegetical and theological context), and 4) I demonstrate the reception of this tool with particular relevance for Sedulius. Though my work differs in these respects, Robertson’s study confirms my analysis of the appearance and importance of the septem circumstantiae within Cicero and later rhetoricians.

⁸⁶ Frede, 1997, 50*. In this context, Frede cites two articles by Bischoff: “Wendepunkte” (1991), 221 and “Eine hibernolateinische Einleitung zu den Evangelien”, in: Mittelalterliche Studien. But, Bischoff only claims in these articles that the schema which Sedulius uses (and which is also used by Paschasius Radbertus) is typical to Irish exegesis (i.e., the use of any schema) and bears particular resemblance to the scholastic questions of locus, tempus, and persona. The crux of these articles (221 of “Wendepunkte” and the whole of the other) is to demonstrate that the Irish used enumerations and schemata as introductory material. I do not contest any of his information, but only wish to point out that he does not offer the necessary specifics to help understand the schema which Sedulius in particular uses in his Prologue, namely the seven species of circumstance. I also submit this study of the seven circumstanes as further evidence of Sedulius exhibiting typical Irish traits (in his use of a schema), while also distinguishing himself as a rare witness to this specific schema, which as I will demonstrate reveals Servius as the likely literary model.

voluntary and involuntary acts ought to be helpful for students of ethics and legislators who dole out rewards and punishments. Thus the major issue of book three, chapter one is defining the difference between “voluntary” (ἔκούσιον) and “involuntary acts” (ἀκούσιον). He further notes that all acts due to ignorance are “non voluntary” (οὐχ ἑκούσιον), but when they induce regret he classifies them as involuntary. He then enumerates the circumstances which one would have to be ignorant of in order to qualify an act as involuntary. He writes,

Therefore it is not a pointless endeavor to divide these circumstances by kind and number: [1] the who, [2] the what, [3] around what place or [4] in which time something happens, and sometimes [5] with what, such as an instrument, [6] for the sake of what, such as saving a life and [7] the how, such as gently or violently. No one would be ignorant concerning these things, therefore, except for the mad.

Aristotle continues by providing an illustration for each of the above seven circumstances, and he further claims that if one does act in ignorance of any one of the seven, then that person is considered to have acted involuntarily. He concludes his comments on the circumstances by asserting that “[3] around what place or [4] in which time something happens”, and “[6] for the sake of what” are the two most important ones. We may deduce then that these circumstances function as a set of questions one ought to investigate before one can rightly judge the merits of an act. Aquinas cited Aristotle as the originator of this schema; however, no modern scholar that I am aware of, including Rackham, Ostwald, and Rowe and Broadie’s

88 Cf. Ostwald, 52.
89 Such is the way that Rackham and Ostwald translated “voluntary” (ἔκούσιον), “involuntary” (ἀκούσιον) and “non voluntary” (οὐχ ἑκούσιον) actions. They both offered comments explaining their decision to use these words. Cf. Rackham’s note on 116 and Ostwald’s note on 52.
90 Aristotle, *Nicomachean Ethics*, IIIa.2-8. ἰδοὺ οὖν οὐχ ἑκούσιον διώρισαν αὐτά, τίνα καὶ πόσα ἔστι, τίς τε δὴ καὶ τί καὶ περὶ τί ἢ ἐν τίνι πρότετε, ἔντοτε δὲ καὶ τίνι, οἷον ἄργων, καὶ ἱκανά τίνος, οἷον σωτηρίας, καὶ πῶς, οἷον ἀνέμα ἢ σφόδρα. ἀπαντᾷ μὲν οὖν τάσις οὐδές ἢ ἁγνόςεις μὴ μανθάνεις. There are numerous acceptable translations available; however, I have used my own translation here and throughout the chapter (even for passages of Cicero and Quintilian, who also have acceptable translations available) so that the reader might more easily recognize the continuity between this passage and my translations of similar material, which appears in later Latin rhetorical writings, for which there are no available translations. The enumerations in brackets (done for the reader) are my own here and throughout all excerpts of passages on the seven types of circumstance which I treat.
translations or commentary has heretofore noted the significance of this passage with regard to its later reception.

As Aristotle noted, defining and enumerating those circumstances would be beneficial not only to students of ethics, but also to those in the realm of law where awards and punishments are decided upon. Cicero (106-43 B.C.E.) wrote *De Inventione* at an early age,\(^92\) and although he would criticize the work later in life, it nonetheless became a prominent resource for Latin rhetoricians, especially for those in the medieval age. The work systematically treats the art of rhetoric, often citing Hermagoras\(^93\) as well as Aristotle. Cicero criticizes the lack of sound philosophical principles within the work of Hermagoras,\(^94\) but praises Aristotle as one who has added more to the subject of rhetoric than anyone else.\(^95\) The philosophical function of the circumstances, as explained in Aristotle’s *Nichomachean Ethics*, is embedded throughout book one of *De Inventione*.

After a basic introduction to oratory, which comprises chapters one through eight, Cicero begins to define and classify the different elements of oratory.\(^96\) Chapter nine asserts “invention” as the most important division of a speech and contains Cicero’s rationalization for discussing it only and not the rest of the divisions (hence the title, *De Inventione*). Chapter ten contains strong resemblances to Aristotle in thought and language as he divides all disputes into four categories, those of “fact”, “name”, “type”, or “action”, and he relates the burden of the speaker, in any speech containing a dispute, to defending the intention of an act or affair. Cicero writes,

\begin{quote}
Omnis res, quae habet in se positam in dictione ac disceptatione aliquam controversiam, aut facti aut nominis aut generis aut actionis continet quaecionem. Eam igitur
\end{quote}

---

\(^92\) Simon and Obbink, 1558-1564.

\(^93\) A Greek rhetorician from Temnos (fl. ca. 150 B.C.E.). Though uninterested in stylistic matters, his rhetorical doctrines soon became a prominent source for later writers such as Cicero and Quintilian. Cf. Russell, 689.

\(^94\) Cicero, *De Inventione*, 1.6.8.

\(^95\) Cicero, *De Inventione*, 1.5.7.

\(^96\) Cicero, *De Inventione*, 1.8.10.
The link to Aristotle is located in the phrase *constitutio est prima conflictio causarum ex depulsione intentionis profecta*. This statement is an explicit claim that a dispute hinges on intention, and it mirrors Aristotle’s philosophy that a deed can only be judged after investigating whether or not an agent is acting in “ignorance” or “awareness” of certain circumstances.

Chapter ten concludes after he lists and defines each category of dispute. Next Cicero provides a longer explanation of each category by giving hypothetical situations for each. In Cicero’s example of a controversy of type he again echoes Aristotle’s claim that knowing certain circumstances of an act will help judge its merit. In *De Inventione* 1.9.12, he writes:

> Generis est controversia, cum et, quid factum sit, convenit et, quo id factum nomine appallari oporteat, constat et tamen, quantum et cuiusmodi et omnino quale sit, quaceritur, hoc modo: iustum an inustum, utile an inutile, et omnia, in quibus, quale sit id, quod factum est, quaceritur sine ulla nominis controversia.  

He is not at this point defining or listing the circumstances as he does later, but merely points out that they must be considered. Though he only briefly alludes to a few circumstances here, one can nevertheless recognize the similarity of these questions with the circumstances listed by Aristotle. Specifically, Aristotle listed the two most important circumstances as the nature of the act itself and its consequential effect, καὶ ἐν οἷρὴ πεπιστήμη ἐν οἷρῃ πράξις καὶ ἐν ἔνεκα (with ἐν οἷρῃ πράξις referring to πέρι τὸ ἓν τίνι πράττει from III.a.4, which is circumstance [3] within the above translation), and Cicero here writes *et omnia, in quibus, quale sit id, quod*

---

97 This, *De Inventione*, 1.8.10, and all following translations of Cicero are my own. “Every matter, which has in itself any controversy positioned in speech or discussion, contains a question either of fact or name or type or of proceeding. That question, therefore, out of which a cause is born, we call the issue. The issue is the first conflict of causes having being brought forth by a defense of intention, in this way; ‘You did it;’ ‘No, I did not;’ or, ‘I did it lawfully.’”

98 Cicero, *De Inventione*, 1.9.12. “It is a controversy of type, when both what has been done and by what name the deed ought to be called is agreed and nevertheless it is questioned ‘how important’ and ‘of what type’ and ‘of what nature it is’, in this way: whether it be just or unjust, useful or unuseful, and all other circumstances, ‘in what’, ‘what type it is’, and ‘what has been done’ is questioned without any debate concerning the ‘name’ of the deed.”
factum est. They are questions that inquire about the nature and physical setting of an act. They are points of reference which can verify the intention of an agent and ultimately help decide the merit of a deed: “whether just or unjust, useful or unuseful” etc.

Cicero lists the circumstances once he begins his discourse on the “narration” aspect of an oration. In *De Inventione* 1.21.29 he writes,


The first and last lines of this excerpt are intratextually linked with his opening line about *inventio* (*De Inventione*, 1.7.9): *Inventio est excogitatio rerum verarum aut veri similium, quae causam probabilem reddant* (“Invention is the devising of true things or things that seem like the truth, which render the cause as probable.”). Per the previous statement, these circumstances are the nucleus around which a speech of “dispute” (or one containing a “cause”) is built, which is yet another example of the Aristotelian function that the circumstances fulfill in the context of a speech.

A close comparison of this excerpt with Aristotle’s list of circumstances reveals the two as remarkably similar. The differences are easily rationalized when one takes into account the change of perspective. Aristotle is writing from a philosophical context to qualify an act as voluntary or involuntary so that a deed may ultimately be deemed as virtuous or shameful. Thus, for Aristotle the perspective originates with the agent’s personal awareness (or lack thereof) of the circumstances, whereas Cicero is writing from the perspective of a lawyer, and these circumstances are questions to investigate for the purpose of building a defense. So, the

---

99 A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.
character of the person is important (an issue which Cicero later discusses) but is a trait absent from Aristotle’s list; likewise, Aristotle’s πῶς (“how”) is important to Cicero inasmuch as the lawyer can relate it to the nature of the agent and the opinion of the hearers. Thus, what I have enumerated as the seventh circumstance in Cicero represents Aristotle’s category of “how”.

In De Inventione 1.24.34, Cicero again provides a list of circumstances, again equaling seven in number, though slightly modified from those appearing in 1.21.29, and then explains what he considers to be the necessary questions to consider in order to apply them in a speech. Here he claims that the circumstances are a means for confirming an argument, or adding faith and authority to one’s speech, in effect echoing his conviction that the circumstances serve to make a narration probable. Thus, any statement must be made plausible or convincing by adding detailed information. The template of the seven types of circumstance then serves as a basic set of questions one ought to pursue in order to supply substantial information to corroborate one’s statement. In more rhetorically technical terms, Cicero contends that every speech hinges on one or several question(s), i.e., a prompt. Every prompt then is either about the law or general reasoning. The ensuing stating of the case requires the confirmation of precepts or proofs. Cicero writes,


The ellipses follow the “person”, because Cicero proceeds to discuss the various questions one has to ask in order to discover all the necessary information about the “person” in paragraphs 34-37. Again, the character and various other attributes which make up a person are important for Cicero’s purpose, though they were not necessarily important for Aristotle. Once

100 Cicero, De Inventione, 1.24.34 and 1.26.38. A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.
Cicero ends his discussion on the “person”, he then lists circumstances two through seven as enumerated above. After listing circumstances two through seven, he examines each one in much the same way he did for the “person”, though to a slightly lesser degree in regard to length. While he uses many of the same words in the above chapters (1.24.34 – 1.27.41) that he uses in the previous list of circumstances (1.21.29), a comparative reading reveals a few changes. Within his explication of modus (1.27.41) he includes both the “how”, which is represented by the clause si res... accomodabitur in 1.21.29, and the “why”, which is represented in 1.21.29 by the term causa. Also satis spatii (from 1.21.29) represents what Cicero here broadly calls tempus, and tempus idoneum (from 1.21.29) here represents occasio.101

Quintilian, known more as a teacher and systematizer of rhetoric than a practitioner, also writes a list of circumstances very similar to Aristotle’s and Cicero’s in his work, Institutio Oratoria (Inst. Orat.). In the first instance he sets the circumstances in the larger context of “definite” and “indefinite” questions, which in principle is the same as both Aristotle and Cicero. Quintilian claims that before one can decide “whether or not ‘X’ ought to marry”, one must first decide if marriage is a desirable state. Thus the circumstances are then introduced as a set of questions which help to ascertain information for the passing of judgment. The explicit reference comes up in the immediate context of defining a causa:


---

101 One could perhaps argue that spatii satis in fact represents occasio and tempus idoneum represents tempus, but either way, a comparison of the two texts clearly shows that occasio and tempus are accounted for in those other two statements.
102 Apollodorus from Pergamum is the figurehead of the Apollodorei (“Apollodoreans”), whom Quintilian references at 2.11.2 and 3.1.18 within the Inst. Orat. Apollodorus is also noted by Suetonius as serving as a tutor for Augustus on the subject of elocution and that Apollodorus, despite being an old man at the time, accompanied Augustus to Apollonia (Suetonius, De Vita Caesarum, 89).
negotium περιστασιν ... Cicero his verbis:103 ‘Causa certis personis, locis, temporibus, actionibus, negotiis cernitur, aut in omnibus aut in plerisque eorum.’104

With Quintilian the scope of the list of circumstances seems to broaden in comparison to Aristotle and Cicero. However, the language and terminology is consistent with that found in Aristotle and Cicero, despite the list of circumstances equaling ten in the Apollodorus quotation. Six of those, the persona, locus, tempus, causa, modus, and factum are identical with the terms found in Cicero, which leaves instrumentum and three others seemingly unaccounted for: casus, sermon and scriptum, and non scriptum. The latter three are easily explained as they are categories considered by Cicero under his circumstance of res/factum/negotium. Instrumentum is a specific aspect of what Cicero considers under facultas. Though the difference is only slight, Apollodorus uses the word negotium differently from Cicero. In Cicero, negotium was synonymous with res or factum and the rest of the circumstances are in relation to negotium, but Apollodorus defines negotium as the culmination of circumstances and not just a single circumstance in itself, thus making negotium a synonym for circumstantiae. This conclusion is not only revealed in the context of Quintilian’s quotation of Apollodorus, but also by Quintilian’s own comment that negotium equals περιστασις, which when translated directly into Latin is circumstantia.105

Quintilian’s quotation of Cicero at the end of the passage suggests that the circumstances are void of any uniform systematic coherence; however, a comparison of that quotation with the language found in De Inventione 1.21.29 reveals almost an identical relation of words in both terminology and order. The main difference between the list in De Inventione 1.21.29 and

103 Cicero, Topica, 21.80.
104 Quintilian, Inst. Orat., 3.5.17-18. A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.
105 This is done first in Quintilian’s Inst. Orat., 5.10.104, see TLL s.v. circumstantia 1173.17-20.
Quintilian’s quotation of Cicero (from his *Topica* XXI.80) is that there is no explicit mention of *modus*, *occasio*, and *facultas*.

Quintilian references these circumstances again in his *Inst. Orat.*, though this time in book four, where he discusses how to make a narration probable.


The similarity of this passage with *De Inventione* 1.21.29 is evident and requires no drawn out comparison. The context – how to make a narration probable or believable, in which the reference to the circumstances is made – and the purpose for which they are used are both identical to Cicero’s. The difference between the two passages is that Quintilian summarizes certain details listed in Cicero’s passage and retains only the main ideas. For example, instead of listing all the circumstances that Cicero mentions, he identifies *persona*, *factum*, *loca* and *tempora* and envelopes the rest of the circumstances with the phrase *et similia*.

The next instance occurs in the very next chapter as Quintilian continues to discuss the virtues of a credible narration. He suggests that it may be beneficial to refer subtly to certain proofs in the narration.


\(^{106}\) Quintilian, *Inst. Orat.*, 4.2.52. A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.

\(^{107}\) Quintilian, *Inst. Orat.*, 4.2.53-55. A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.
He lists six circumstances after *rei*, thus bringing the total to seven. However, this list differs slightly from Cicero’s. This list does not include *modus* and *facultas*, but instead contains *causa* and *instrumentum* respectively. Unlike Cicero’s treatment of the circumstances in *De Inventione* 1.24.34 – 1.27.41, Quintilian never follows the list of circumstances with a series of questions or topics to investigate for each circumstance.

The last instances all appear in the *Rhetores Latini Minores* (hereafter referred to as RLM). The authors featured in the RLM are all very similar in content and lean heavily upon the works of Cicero, Quintilian and Hermagoras. The works vary in purpose and range from systematic epitomes of classical rhetoric handbooks to a treatise dedicated to a king. The authors of most of the works are presumed as known, however, there are a few entirely unknown and others that are debatable. For example, the editor C. Halm follows a long tradition naming Aurelius Augustinus as the author of *De Rhetorica*. However, much speculation surrounds the issue. This study will assume the authorship of Augustine,108 but even if later scholarship decides that such an opinion is wrong, it will not impact the findings of this study as it can be confidently asserted that Sedulius presumed as much.109 The excerpts from the RLM will be presented in chronological order according to their author’s life.

Sulpultius Victor (hereafter referred to as S. Victor), presumably from the late third and early fourth centuries, wrote a work entitled *Institutiones Oratoriae*. This work methodically defines certain key rhetorical phrases and concepts; for example, he begins the work by defining the term “rhetoric”. The seven types of circumstance are introduced under his discussion of

108 As this study will indirectly point out, there is significant lexical evidence based upon similarities between the *De Rhetorica* and other Augustinian writings which leads one to affirm the long standing tradition of Augustine as the author. See also most recently Giomini, 2-33.
109 While it is convenient to have Augustine explicitly using the “seven types of circumstance”, his pre-conversion life as a teacher of rhetoric allows us to presume his familiarity with such a tool. Also, other textual evidence from famously known works of Augustine reveal his knowledge of this rhetorical tool and are discussed later in this study.
“narration”, and particularly, how to make a narration probable or believable. This is the same context under which Cicero (1.21.29 of *De Inventione*) and Quintilian (*Inst. Orat.* 4.2.52) both listed a series of circumstances.


All of the circumstances mentioned above are mentioned in 1.21.29 of Cicero’s *De Inventione*. However, there are two noteworthy differences. First, the list totals only six of the circumstances, as it lacks *modus*. The term *modus* does not appear in 1.21.29 of Cicero’s *De Inventione* either; however, as I argued earlier it is accounted for in a clause, and the term is later employed in 1.24.34 in place of the said clause. S. Victor, however, omits both the clause and the term. The second difference is that S. Victor offers a corresponding interrogative pronoun for some of the nouns. Aristotle introduced the circumstances with interrogatives, but both Cicero and Quintilian described the circumstances with specific nouns. Though S. Victor does not offer a complete list of interrogative pronouns, the partial list is nonetheless a significant first, as almost all of the ensuing listed authors include the combination of nouns and their corresponding interrogative pronouns.

Marius Victorinus, who lived circa 300-370 and is referred to in Augustine’s *conf.*, wrote a commentary on Cicero’s *De Inventione*. This work is particularly insightful given its explicit intention of expounding Cicero’s meaning on the passages which this study has identified as the original locus for the Latin employment of what becomes known as the seven types of circumstance.

---

\(^{110}\)Halm, 323, 16-21. A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.
(Quoting Cicero’s *De Inventione* 1.21.29) ‘Probabilis erit narratio, si in ea videbuntur inesse ea, quae solent apparere in veritate…’ (Here begins Victorinus’ commentary)

Secundum ordinem divisionis suae, postquam de brevi et aperta narratione tractavit, nunc incipit de narratione probabilis disputare. Probabilis, inquit erit narratio, si in ea fuerint illa omnia, quibus solet veritas inveniri; nam in his septem omnis ad fidem argumentatio continetur.…


This passage reveals a more defined version of the circumstances than previous excerpts. Specifically, he describes them as seven in number, which is a first from the extant literature, and he employs interrogative pronouns for every circumstance. Victorinus actually goes on to argue that Cicero in fact lists an eighth circumstance and names it *opinio*. This comment is based upon Victorinus’ understanding of the phrase *si res… opinionem accommodabitur*. This interpretation of Cicero is particularly revealing on several accounts. First, Victorinus includes the term *modus* in the list of seven, but Cicero does not use that term until *De Inventione* 1.24.34. By adding *modus* to the list, he must either say that it represents the *opinio*… clause or (as he does) that that clause is in fact an eighth circumstance. Also, his first description of the circumstances as “seven”, followed by his comment “but Cicero adds…”, suggests that the seven nouns and their correlating interrogative pronouns were, by this time, widely known and used as a schema or rhetorical tool and that their development over time most likely came from an understanding of reading *De Inventione* 1.21.29 in combination with *De Inventione* 1.24.34. Not that we would presume exaggeration by Victorinus, but these findings help confirm his statement.

---

111 At this point in the text a chart was inserted with the seven nouns listed in the first line and the corresponding interrogatives connected by a line below each noun. The seven nouns listed in chart are: *persona, factum, causa, locus, tempus, modus, facultas*. 

112 Marius Victorinus, *explanationem in Ciceronis rhetoricam*, I.21.1-14 (CC 132). A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading. 

113 Quoting 1.21.29 of Cicero’s *De Inventione*. 

44
found in the above excerpt, “all writers of academic disciplines have dealt with [the seven types of circumstance] and have embedded them in the precepts of their own academic disciplines.”

R. Giomini and M.S. Celentano edited a text of C. Julius Victor’s (hereafter referred to as J. Victor) *Ars Rhetorica*, dating him into the fourth century.\(^{114}\) J. Victor’s treatment of the “seven parts of circumstance”, as he calls them, is the briefest of the three within the RLM and appears under the subject heading of “De Inventione”. He discusses the order in which one organizes a speech, and he claims that once the matter or theme of the speech is established, then the *peristasis causae* (“circumstance of the cause”) ought to be investigated. He proceeds to say,


Though he offers the same list of interrogative pronouns as his predecessors, he does not offer the nouns to which they relate. Twice he notes that a cause is not able to stand unless it contains the circumstances, which is similar to the arguments of both Cicero and Quintilian, who claim that the circumstances help make a narration credible. While J. Victor largely uses his own terminology, the most evident sign of dependence reveals a similarity not with Cicero or with Quintilian, but with Quintilian’s quotation of Apollodorus. It is Apollodorus who claims that a circumstance’s end is a *controversia* and that the circumstances are in fact a *congregatio* of people, places, times, etc. J. Victor does not offer a series of questions to ask, nor does he

---

\(^{114}\) Celentano and Giomini (eds.), vi.

\(^{115}\) J. Victor, *Ars Rhetorica*, (3, 16-27, Giomini). A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.
suggest what aspects of the *quis* or *quid*, etc., are to be explored as Cicero does in 1.34-41 and as do the later writers within the RLM.

Augustine also discusses the seven types of circumstance in his work *De Rhetorica*. He presents them in the context of defining the word *peristasis*.


Augustine seems to synthesize various works on the subject. He follows Quintilian who is the first to explain that *circumstantia* is the Latin equivalent of the Greek *peristasis*.117

Previously writers had used either *peristasis* or *circumstantia* but not both. Also, Augustine presents the order of the seven types of circumstance in exactly the same order as J. Victor, which differs slightly from Victorinus, though all three use the same interrogative pronouns.

However, Augustine differs from all his predecessors in one respect: where they named *facultas* as the seventh circumstance, he called it by its Greek name, ἄφορμα ("resources"). Like Cicero, Augustine discusses the nature of each circumstance and presents a series of categories

---

116 Augustinus, *De Rhetorica*, 7-8 (47, 1-50, 9, Giomini). A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.

and/or questions to consider when drawing out the relevant information of each species of circumstance. Augustine offers a longer treatment of *persona* or *quis* than any other circumstance, a characteristic he shares with Cicero; however, the disparity of length in Cicero is explained in his claim that the *persona* is extremely complex in nature,\textsuperscript{118} and Augustine echoes that statement by saying that the qualities of a person are *infinita numero*.

The *Dictionary for Greek and Roman Biography*\textsuperscript{119} presents Chirius Fortunatianus as a “Roman lawyer who flourished about the middle of the fifth century shortly before Cassiodorus, by whom he is quoted.” Fortunatianus’ three books on the art of rhetoric serve as a general survey of classical rhetoric. This work is largely a series of rhetorical terms and concepts that he lists and defines, and his introduction to the seven types of circumstance in this context affirms it as a common rhetorical tool or even as a fixed schema:


Fortunatianus does not offer correlating interrogatives for each species of circumstance, but does, like Cicero and Augustine, provide information on what to consider for each circumstance. Also like Augustine, he does not use *facultas* as the seventh circumstance, but instead employs a heretofore unused term, *materia*.

The next instance comes from Isidore (ca. 560-636), who furnishes further proof of the development of the seven types of circumstance. In his *De Generibus Quaestionum*, Isidore

\textsuperscript{118} Cicero, *De Inventione*, 1.24.34.
\textsuperscript{119} Smith, 181.
\textsuperscript{120} Halm, 102, 20-104, 31. A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.
names only a few of the circumstances explicitly, but even these he does not cover extensively. The brevity with which he treats this section may suggest the schema is by this point a familiar feature which does not require his commentary. The circumstances are mentioned in the context of discussing the difference between a “hypothesis” and “thesis”, as was the case with Augustine as well. Isidore writes,

Genera quaestionum duo sunt, quorum unum est finitum, alterum infinitum. Finitum ὑπόθεσις Graece, Latine causa dicitur, ubi cum certa persona controversia est: 2. infinitum, quod Graece θέσις Latine propositum nominatur. Hoc personam non habet certam, nec inest aliqua certa circumstantia, id est nec locus nec tempus. In causa vero certa omnia sunt, unde quasi pars causae est propositum.\(^{121}\)

The last excerpt, which this section will discuss, is found in Alcuin’s work De Rhetorica, written around 790. Alcuin references the seven types of circumstance in the context of dividing the art of rhetoric into three types and then delineating how one ought to make one’s narration credible in any of those types. Alcuin writes,


Alcuin also uses the term *circumstantia* and describes the circumstances as “seven” in number. He offers all the standard nouns that the predecessors (previously discussed) use, except he employs the term *occasio* for the “why” pronoun instead of *causa*. This excerpt is very similar to the ones presented before, although Alcuin never references any Greek terms, a

\(^{121}\) Halm, 515, 10-15. A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.

\(^{122}\) Halm, 527, 7-20. A translation of this quote is given in the appendix under the appropriate heading.
To summarize, what became known as the “seven types of circumstance” was originally an informal set of questions used by Aristotle to investigate whether or not an act was just or unjust. Cicero used these same questions, and more, and argued for transposing the findings of such questions into a narration in order to make it more credible. The questions were called various things by Cicero, but Quintilian equated them to *peristasis* and *circumstanzia*. Eventually, commentators and writers of rhetorical handbooks throughout the early medieval period canonized these questions into specific terms and fixed them to seven in number.

### iii) Identifying Sedulius’ Sources for the Septem Circumstanziae

Since we do not know which of these works Sedulius had available to him – he did not cite anyone explicitly as the source for the seven types of circumstance – this section of the study will compare Sedulius’ passage with the extant works mentioned above to determine, based on lexical similarities, which tradition in particular Sedulius was likely following.

Lines four and five of the Prologue contain two key words: *species* and *peristasis*. J. Victor alone describes the seven types of circumstance as seven *species* of circumstance. Quintilian and Augustine are the only two who use the Greek word *peristasis*. However, Augustine uses *peristasis* in a very similar sentence (though with a slightly different spelling from Sedulius). Augustine writes, *Sunt igitur partes circumstanziae, id est peristaseos, septem…* whereas Sedulius writes, *VII species sunt peristasios id est circumstanziae…*. The next

---

124 Sedulius spells the genitive with an “i” *peristasios*, but Augustine spells it with an “e” *peristaseos*. Also, Augustine writes the word both in Greek script (but only when quoting Hermagoras) as well as the transliterated form, but Sedulius only uses the transliterated form.
clause *sine quibus nullae quaeciones proponuntur nulla argumenta tractantur nullaque ars aut opus constare potest* is similarly expressed in three other writers: J. Victor, Augustine and Alcuin. Again, Augustine’s phrase seems to be the most closely related. Alcuin conveys the same main idea, but it is not lexically related. He writes: *per has enim et confirmari potest causa et infirmari.* J. Victor’s clause, *Vides hanc causam stare non posse* uses *stare*; Sedulius uses *constare*, but it comes after the introduction of the circumstances and is used to emphasize an example. Augustine’s clause, *sine qua ulla omnino controversia non potest esse* also follows his description of *peristasis*. The salient difference between Augustine and Sedulius is the verb each uses: Augustine employs *esse* while Sedulius writes *constare*; despite this difference the meaning of the clauses remains the same.

Lines 6-11 of Sedulius’ Prologue list the seven types of circumstance with their corresponding interrogative pronouns. Though these lines are of course similar to the preceding examples, only Fortunatianus uses the same seven nouns, even listing them in the same order. He does not however include the alternate word for *res* (*factum*), or the alternate word for *materia* (*facultas*), which Sedulius includes. Also, Fortunatianus omits the corresponding interrogative pronouns. There are four authors who offer the corresponding interrogative pronouns: S. Victor, Victorinus, Augustine and Alcuin. All have *cur* instead of *quare*, but only Cicero, S. Victor and Alcuin introduce the interrogatives with the verb *facio*, as Sedulius did.

Lines 9-11 of Sedulius’ Prologue contain explanatory clauses for two of the *species* of circumstance (1, Frede): *Quomodo fecit? Verbi gratia utrum bene an male, stulte an sapienter.* *Qua materia vel facultate? Verbi gratia utrum ferro an veneno iste illum occidit.* Cicero offers explanatory clauses such as these for all of the *species* of circumstances that he lists, as does Augustine. Neither Cicero nor Augustine qualify *quomodo* with the adverbs *bene an male, stulte*
an sapienter, but they do both suggest ferro an veneno as possible weapons under the circumstance materia vel facultate.

Prologue lines 13-18 also bear similarities to both Cicero and Augustine. Cicero refers to the difficulty of defining human nature at the end of chapter 34 in De Inventione, and Augustine likewise claims that the qualities of people are infinite in number. Both go on to list examples of qualities, but, like Sedulius, Augustine claims that his list is not exhaustive. Sedulius writes, et reliquis quae nunc per singula enumerare perlongum est, whereas Augustine writes, et cetera, quae sunt infinita numero.¹²⁵

The above analysis shows that Sedulius’ language and organization most often resembles Augustine’s, but discrete occurrences of specific words and constructions suggest the additional influences of J. Victor, Fortunatianus, and Alcuin. This survey of extant examples has revealed the context in which the seven types of circumstance were originally used, as well as how they developed into a defined rhetorical schema. If we were to transpose the traditional rhetorical function of the seven types of circumstance onto Sedulius’ Prologue, we could surmise that the Prologue’s purpose is to confirm and strengthen the claims of the ensuing commentaries. Furthermore, identifying Augustine, Fortunatianus, and Alcuin as likely sources for Sedulius’ presentation of this trope not only improves upon Frede’s apparatus fontium, but also demonstrates another link between Sedulius and Codex (B).

When J. J. H. Savage described Codex (B), he noted the other works that the scribe had copied:

ff. 143a-166b contain the Ars rhetorica of Fortunatianus, de dialectica and de rhetorica of St. Augustine, and the Ars rhetorica of Clodianus (cf. Hagen, codex Bern., praeef., ii). From f. 167a to f. 186b: Carmina Horatii (incomplete); ff. 187a-188b contain excerpts from the Metamorphoses of Ovid; ff. 188b-194a excerpts from Bede's History; ff. 194b-197b have various carmina (cf. Hagen, Carmina medii Aevi, pp. I ff.)… Quat. XVIII,

¹²⁵ Augustinus, De Rhetorica, 7 (49, 1, Giomini).
with which the commentary of Servius ends, runs from f. 137 to f. 144, so that part of the quaternion holds some of the extraneous matter which follows (i.e., Alcuin's *rhetorica*).

The works of notable import are the *Ars rhetorica* of Fortunatianus, *de dialectica* and *de rhetorica* of Augustine, and Alcuin's *rhetorica*. Thus the above verbal analysis seems to confirm Savage’s conjecture that Sedulius Scottus is the scribe for Codex (B), which would also lend weight to the conclusion that Sedulius was familiar with Donatus’ *Vita*.

In conclusion, Sedulius’ Prologue and application of the seven types of circumstance mirror the pedagogical approach of Donatus’ and Servius’ prefaces to their commentaries on Virgil’s *Aeneid*. The numerous inter-textual links and external connections between Sedulius and the work of Donatus and Servius suggest that Sedulius was not only familiar with their work but attempted to emulate their methodology in order to instruct his readers of the Pauline epistles in the same way that they had introduced Virgil. In this ecclesiastical context, the application of the seven types of circumstance serves as an early example of a critical approach to the New Testament based at least in part on the historical circumstances from which it was written. It reveals the extent to which Sedulius considered Scripture historical truth, but also the authority he grants to traditional ecclesiastical sources outside of Scripture, especially Augustine, whose promotion of a hermeneutic of trust, as in *util. cred.*, is emphasized through the application of the seven types of circumstance and the authority which they inherently lend to Paul, the author of the surveyed Scriptures. Additionally, Sedulius’ adaptation of quintessential classical schoolroom texts exposes a judicious scholarly temperament, a significant point, since some scholars contend that only during the Reformation did biblical studies truly emerge as an academic pursuit alongside devotional ones.\footnote{Kümmel, 1987, 30.}
3.4 Pedagogical Content

Commentaries are inherently didactic, but vary in purpose, complexity, content etc., to suit their audience. Contreni notes that most Carolingian biblical exegesis was composed for pedagogical purposes rather than to further the cause of scholarship or to expand exegetical frontiers; he proposes the educated layman or laywoman, the ecclesiastical administrator, and the beginning student as the most common audiences.\textsuperscript{127} Sedulius’ emulation of Servius suggests that his commentary was designed as a school text, and several features in the Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians buttress this assertion, including the use of marginalia in later copies of Sedulius’ \textit{Collectaneum}, numerous references to teachers and students, and elementary, scholastic and theological topoi.

Unlike many of the prefaces and prologues of extant biblical commentaries from the Carolingian age, Sedulius does not discuss his motive for writing his \textit{Collectaneum}, and the scant internal evidence is too meager to provide a definitive answer. However, there is reason to believe it was used as a pedagogical tool: Sedulius’ probable role as a teacher, his emulation of Servius (as discussed above), features within his Latinity (ensuing chapter), and matters of content, such as marginalia, which I will now discuss.

\textit{i) Marginalia}

The first writer known to have included marginalia in his own text was Bede, who noted his patristic source in the margins of his Luke and Mark commentaries. His marginalia mark a pivotal point in the formation of a patristic canon, since he only used the marginal source-marks for Ambrose, Augustine, Gregory the Great and Jerome, thus becoming the first writer to group

\textsuperscript{127} Contreni, 1983, 79-80.
these four together. Bede included the *marginalia* “lest it be said that I steal the words of those who have gone before me by offering them as my own.” Marginalia thus became a common feature in many Carolingian commentaries and served much the same purpose as Bede’s; but in Carolingian society, where education was centered upon the study of the Bible, particularly patristic exegesis, they also functioned as a valuable pedagogical tool. When Alexander Souter first collated the extant manuscripts of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* and eventually published an article detailing the sources of Sedulius, he believed that the *marginalia* were original to Sedulius. Frede, however, convincingly argues that this is not the case, as not only do some of the *marginalia* indicate the wrong source, but the abbreviations used vary, indicating multiple interpolators. Even though the *marginalia* do not date back to Sedulius himself, their existence in early copies indicates that the *Collectaneum* probably served a pedagogical function.

**ii) References to Teachers and Students**

Sedulius understands Paul’s letters, both individually and corporately, as tools for the edification of the church and directs his commentary to the same purpose. Furthermore, Sedulius realizes that his commentary’s influence extends beyond his own congregation to the entire church. In his comment on Gal 5:9 (541, VIII.20-22, Frede) he reveals a heavy sense of self awareness as a teacher and scholar: “[t]he mange of one member of the herd stains the whole flock. Thus the perverse doctrine going forth from one individual, enters many hearers.” Hence

---

132 Frede, 1997, 39* and 55*-57*.
134 Prologue, lines 140-145.
it is not surprising to find many pastoral interjections or teaching moments throughout the commentary in the course of his exegesis.

In Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, multiple expositions explicitly address or mention teachers and/or students. In some of these instances, the text necessitates an exegetical remark; however, in other cases the issue seems forced, such as when Sedulius addresses teachers and/or students as the audience of the Collectaneum. One specific example is Gal 3:1, where Sedulius excerpts from Pelagius’ commentary (64-65), the Clm 6235 (65-67), and adds his own comment (67-68). It is interesting to note here that in Augustine’s and Jerome’s exegesis (which Sedulius does not use in this instance, though we know that he has access to them based on other excerpts from these texts), each are concerned with the issue of why Paul called the Galatians foolish and neither mentions the dynamic of a teacher-student relationship. By using Pelagius, Sedulius takes issue with whether or not Paul should call someone “foolish,” since the Lord forbids such an action in Matthew 5:22. Next, using the Clm 6235, he concludes that such a comment is acceptable because Paul is correcting in a loving manner. Sedulius then inserts his own remark, *ius enim est magistris peccantes increpare discipulos* (“For it is the right of teachers to chide their erring disciples”). The verb *increpare* (“to chide”) is a stronger form of rebuke than *corripit* (“corrects”), which is used in line 66 for the justification of the *stulti* (“foolish”); but ultimately Sedulius turns the emphasis from correcting *more diligentis* (“in a manner of loving”) into an opportunity to affirm a certain right within a teacher-student relationship.

---

138 Frede, 523, III.67-68.
Another explicit reference to a teacher-student dynamic (specifically patronage) occurs in Gal 6:6-8. The commentary is a combination of authors, though primarily derives from Jerome and Sedulius himself. These three verses account for fifteen lines in the commentary, seven of which are Sedulius’ own exegesis. This is an atypical percentage of original exegesis, and an evaluation of his poetry (see below) further reveals the importance of patronage to Sedulius’ and his circumstances. These lines of commentary emphasize the importance of material compensation for spiritual enrichment, an issue which had a practical application for Jerome, who throughout his life relied on patronage and kindnesses from his disciples.\textsuperscript{139} Upon his arrival at Liège (circa 841), Sedulius and his companions were largely dependent on Bishop Hartgar for the provision of their needs, as they were “his (Hartgar’s) scholars.”\textsuperscript{140} This exegesis about sharing with and providing for the teacher is reminiscent of Sedulius’ poems 4, 9 and 49. Whether or not Sedulius specifically taught, he nevertheless provided much to his community through his roles as chief bard, head of the library, and mediator with other centers of learning. The exegesis of Gal 6:6-8 thus provides biblical justification for his appeal to Hartgar for better accommodations. In poem 4 (24-28, 36-45), Sedulius compares his own dank, gloomy accommodations with those of Bishop Hartgar’s. After describing the fine halls of Hagar’s residence, Sedulius describes his own,

\begin{quote}
Our own abode – Ah woe! – shudders in its / gloomy cloak of black: / when daylight finally comes, the shadow / of night permeates these sorry old walls. / These halls, believe me, are unfit for scholars / ...But now, great father, pastor of bounty / and might, help us in our miseries; / speak your gracious words so that this shadowy / house, deprived of daylight, may be embellished. Adorn our ceilings with panels and lovely paintings, / and give us a new key and firm bar for our door; / then put in sparkling windows made of glass, / so that the streaming rays of gentle Phoebus / may illumine, noble bishop, with radiance, / your scholars who love the light....\textsuperscript{141}
\end{quote}

\textsuperscript{139} Rebenich, 24.
\textsuperscript{140} Doyle (tr.), 104, poem 4, line 13.
\textsuperscript{141} Doyle (tr.), 102.
The humor here dispensed mitigates some of the tension of Sedulius’ requests for improvements to his (and his companions’) house, but one can still see the expectation of remuneration underlying his appeal as a scholar in residence. Likewise, in an even more jovial mood, but still with a petitioning voice for due compensation, Sedulius, in poem 9 (1-11, 15, 24-28) criticizes the beer that he and the other scholars are given:

The twin beast of thirst and hunger torments us, / and wounds us with its tearing beaks. / No rich abundance of goods delights us; / rather, dreadful poverty oppresses our spirits. / We cannot revel in the sweet gifts of Bacchus, / and even honeyed mead shuns our halls. / The parched Meuse does not gladden us with wine, / and we lack the sweet grace of golden Ceres. / Thin beer, that cruel monster, vexes us scholars (sophos)- / O Blessed Christ and Lord, help us in our need! / Such undrinkable beer is bitter to taste, / … It numbs all the skills of the scholar’s mind (sophicae mentis), / as it drives away merriment and brings on gloom; / … O father, I beseech you, subdue these twin beasts; dispense a healer, good bishop, for our little wounds, and give a poultice to your servant Sedulius. / That pious bishop laughed at these little verses / and granted his scholar’s request (sophicis votis).\textsuperscript{142}

In poem 49, Sedulius makes an even more blatant appeal to Hartgar for better food and drink as his due for roles he fulfills in that community:

… But with it all, there’s no mirthful drink for me, / no mead, no beer, no gifts of Bacchus. / Alas, how I lack the manifold substance / which the soft earth and dewy air produce! / I am a writer, a musician, Orpheus reborn, / and an ox treading corn, who seeks what is good; and I am your champion bearing wisdom’s arms. O muse, tell my lord bishop of his servant’s plight!\textsuperscript{143}

Sedulius not only refers to himself as a *scriptor* (“author”) and *musicus* (“musician”), i.e., “Orpheus reborn” (*alter Orpheus*), but the reference to himself as “an ox treading corn” (*sum bos triturans*) is almost certainly an allusion to 1 Timothy 5:17-18, “(17) The elders who rule well are to be considered worthy of double honor, especially those who work hard at preaching and teaching. (18) For the Scripture says, ‘You shall not muzzle the mouth of an ox while he is threshing [Vulgate reads, *non infrenabis os bovi trituranti*],’ and ‘The laborer is worthy of his

\textsuperscript{142} Doyle (tr.), 110-11.
\textsuperscript{143} Doyle (tr.), 148.
wages.”” By using this interscriptural reference (*bos tritans* [Sedulius] *los bovi trituranti* [Vulgate]) Sedulius characterizes himself as one who teaches and preaches, and who is therefore due fair compensation as required by the verses he echoes. Also, as we know from Eph 4:11, the role of a teacher must also encompass the role of a pastor and vice versa. Furthermore, the line Doyle translates as “I am your champion bearing wisdom’s arms” is another scriptural reference detailing another pertinent role which Sedulius plays. Doyle’s translation, however, obscures the reference as the Latin reads, *Sum uester miles sophiae praeditus armis* (“I am your soldier gifted with weapons of wisdom”). The military language (*miles* and *armis*) and the reference to wisdom probably allude to his work with Scripture, which is the sword of the Spirit (Ephesians 6:17, “And take the helmet of salvation, and the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God”), and are ultimately a metaphor for Sedulius’ role as a biblical scholar in that community. Thus Sedulius characterizes himself as a poet, scholar, teacher, pastor, and biblical scholar, all of which justify his requests for material gifts and sustenance. Ultimately, Sedulius’ poetry (specifically his appeals in poems 4, 9 and 49 for better accommodations, food and wine) echoes the principles expounded in Eph 6:6-8; thus it is not surprising to find such a high percentage of his own exegesis on these verses which are so relevant for his personal circumstances.

Sedulius also employs pastoral or teaching comments on a more subtle level. For example, in Gal 5:5, Sedulius assimilates Paul’s reference to the Spirit to the practical spiritual life of a believer, “FOR WE IN THE SPIRIT. I.e., by spiritual grace and lifestyle, not by the *letter* of the law.” Similarly in Gal 5:10, Sedulius emerges as pastorally encouraging, “I HAVE CONFIDENCE IN THE LORD CONCERNING YOU. Not through conjecture but by means of a prophetic spirit he proclaims that the Galatians are about to return towards the way of

---

144 Frede, 540, VIII.7-8.
the truth.”145 This hermeneutical maneuver grants a spiritual profundity to Paul, which is transferrable to any shepherd of a flock. The next lines offer yet another example of the apparent teacher-student dynamic in a stylistic feature that is common to Sedulius. Retaining the voice of Paul,146 Sedulius interjects his own comment, which offers the biblical text as its own teaching voice, “YOU WILL THINK NOTHING ELSE. I.e., except for that which I teach through the letter.”

iii) Elementary Grammatical and Literary Topoi

Another type of content found within Sedulius’ commentaries that indicates it is a work intended for elementary instruction is the inclusion of numerous grammatical and literary terms and explanations. These features may be the product of multiple influences: the education manifestos of Charlemagne and his successors, Servius’ pedagogical commentary on the Aeneid, and Sedulius’ early training in an Irish setting. As a cultural setting for his Collectaneum, Charlemagne and his successors mandated a number of educational reforms, “which expanded the numbers of clergy and monks possessing basic levels of literacy.”147 Likewise, Servius’ text, which Sedulius used as a literary model, often identifies – no doubt for his students – the grammatical or literary device employed within a given verse. For example, in I.399, Servius writes:

PUPPESQUE TUAE PUBESQUE TUORUM tropus synechdoche; a parte totum significat, ut Terentius o lepidum caput, id est, lepidus homo.

YOUR SHIPS AND YOUR PEOPLE is an employment of the trope, synecdoche, which signifies the whole from a part, as Terence writes o charming head, i.e., charming man.

145 Frede, 541, VIII:24-25.
146 See chapter on Latinity, below, for a further discussion of this stylistic feature.
147 Chazelle and Van Name Edwards, 3.
Also, as an Irishman, Sedulius’ exposure to Latin was largely in a literary environment consisting of grammatical works and commentaries; therefore it is not surprising to find, amidst his exegesis, the identification of basic grammatical and literary terms.

In Gal 3:19, Sedulius identifies a hyperbaton that occurs in the phrase “until his seed came.” Sedulius justifies a gruesome hyperbole in Gal 4:15 (“Where then is that sense of blessing you had? For I bear you witness that, if possible, you would have plucked out your eyes and given them to me.”) by claiming: “This was said hyperbolically because of his superlative love.”

In a display of judicious scholarly temperament, Sedulius also uses literary terms to critique Paul. In Eph 1:16, Sedulius accuses Paul of employing a solecism by employing participles where infinitives are more grammatically correct. Sedulius writes, NON CESSO GRATIAS AGENS. Non cesso gratias agens et faciens per solocismum pro 'non cesso gratias agere et facere'.

Sedulius also identifies the use of metonymy. In Eph 5:16, Sedulius writes: QVONIAM DIES MALI SVNT: Per metanomiam pro his qui in diebus sunt, quia dies mali esse non possunt. Pelagius, whose work Sedulius partly copies, notes that humans, not days, are evil; however, Pelagius does not mention the literary term metonymy. For this, Sedulius borrows from Isidore’s, Etymologies.148 That Sedulius mirrors Pelagius’ work but also excerpts from Isidore’s Etymologies reveals his knowledge of the presence of a literary trope within the biblical text, if not its name as well.

Sedulius twice refers to the quattor figurae, and his employment of all four methods of interpreting Scripture is exceptional among the Carolingian commentators, most of whom

---

148 Isidore and Jerome both commonly serve as a source for linguistic and philological matters for Irish commentators (Cf. McNally, 1958, 396).
employ only one or two. Sedulius first identifies the four-fold method of interpreting Scripture in the Prologue (200-229), where Sedulius quotes from Augustine’s *util. cred.* The second, which appears in Gal 4:26, is borrowed from Cassianus. The two passages differ in the specific terms used and their order. Both, however, contain the term “historical” and present it first, a continuity subsequently maintained by Sedulius that underscores his implicit preference for “historical” more than “allegorical”. That Sedulius presents Cassianus’ terms with slight variations from his reception of Augustine demonstrates that Sedulius is more concerned with the exegetical fruit which it produces than any debate surrounding it. The four-fold method of Scriptural interpretation was a hermeneutical tool of notorious fluidity, a point to which Sedulius bears witness. De Lubac discusses both Augustine and Cassianus and their significance in the development of this hermeneutical tool in his seminal work on the topic, *Medieval Exegesis*.  

iv) *Elementary Ecclesiastical and Theological Topoi*

Sedulius’ commentary also contains a number of entries that articulate both basic ecclesiastical or theological concepts and terms and concepts whose secular meaning is altered in an ecclesiastical context. For example, in Eph 5:2, Sedulius, receiving Pelagius, distinguishes between the three Latin words: *omne sacrificium* (“every sacrifice”), *oblatio* (“offering”), and *hostia* (“sacrificial victim”). Similarly, with a short explanatory clause, Sedulius clarifies the theologically loaded phrase *hoc aere*, which refers to a phrase from an omitted portion of Eph 2:2, *secundum principem potestatis aeris huius*. In this verse Paul combines Greek thought (i.e.,

---

149 The two usually used are the literal and allegorical (or tropological). Cf. Laistner, 303.  
150 I discuss this quotation further in the chapter below, “The Reception of Augustine”.  
151 De Lubac identifies “allegorical” as encompassing the other three terms under a “spiritual understanding” of a text (De Lubac, vol. 1, 135).  
152 For De Lubac’s discussion on Augustine’s treatment of the four-fold method in *util. cred.* see vol. 1, 123-132, and for discussion on Cassianus and his role in the development of this hermeneutical tool, see vol. 1, 132-137.
the two elements of air: 1) the impure air, where imperfect spirits reside and 2) the purer ether) with a tradition in Judaism which distinguished between angels and demons, with the latter residing in the air.\textsuperscript{153} Thus in Ephesians 2:2 Paul describes “this air” as hosting the ruler of this present age of this world, whose spirit works even now among the sons of disobedience. Sedulius’ commentary, then, receiving Pelagius, refers to “this air” as host not to the devil alone but also his subordinates. Furthermore, the first phrase in III.7, \textit{Id est, diabolus} (“I.e., the devil”), is Sedulius’ own explanatory phrase to aid readers’ understanding of the ensuing commentary, taken from Pelagius, which emphasizes the plural aspect of the singular noun \textit{principem}. The addition of the minor phrase by Sedulius is a further demonstration of his concern for the elementary reader in theology.

A final example is Sedulius’ entry, in which he explains the difference between basic ecclesiastical roles. In Eph 4:11, Sedulius writes:

\textit{ALIOS PASTORES ET DOCTORES.} Non autem ait: ‘Alios pastores et alios doctores’, sed: Alios pastores et doctores, ut, qui pastor est, debeat esse doctor. \textit{ALIOS VERO EVANGELISTAS.} Omnis apostolus euangelista est, non omnis euangelista apostolus.

This passage typifies Sedulius’ blending of his Irish tendencies with pedagogical aims.\textsuperscript{154} If Sedulius were writing for an advanced member of the clergy or an individual patron strictly desiring the exegesis of the Fathers, then this passage would not likely have appeared. Instead, this passage assumes an audience in the elementary stages of ecclesiastical and educational training as Sedulius uses a subtle linguistic nuance (via Jerome) to highlight an important distinction between the titles of “evangelist” and “apostle”.

\textsuperscript{153} TDNT s.v. \textit{ἀηρ}.
4 Latinity

4.1 Sedulius and Other Carolingian Pauline Commentators

From the years 800-860, the Pauline epistles received more exegetical attention than any other scriptural texts.\(^{155}\) There are eleven extant works of either homiletic selections (2) or comprehensive commentaries (9) on the Pauline epistles. Six authors are responsible for the nine commentaries: Alcuin, Claudius of Turin, Rabanus Maurus, Haimo of Auxerre, four by Florus of Lyons, and the Collectaneum by Sedulius Scottus.\(^{156}\) The plain style of Carolingian biblical commentaries, and of Sedulius particularly – whose work often appears similar to a gloss – may impact conclusions on matters of Latinity, reception and function. Heil, e.g., characterizes Sedulius’ Collectaneum as a “gloss-commentary” and claims that his “brevity and gloss-style” give it a “harshness of tone” and make it “appear especially anti-Jewish.”\(^{157}\) While a sympathetic reader of Heil may concede the description of the Collectaneum as a gloss-commentary on account of its often brief and dogmatic comments, nevertheless one must note that glosses comprised a unique genre with their own technical meaning. One ninth century author defines glossa as providing the sensus verbi, and the content of a gloss generally draws on geographical, zoological, metrological, botanical, historical, legal, and etymological learning in order to define a given word.\(^{158}\) Contreni notes in his introduction to the Glossae divinae historiae that “the characteristic of the glosses is the almost complete absence of allegorizing or

\(^{155}\) Heil, 76.
\(^{156}\) Heil, 77.
\(^{157}\) Heil, 90. This quote, and Heil’s interpretation of Sedulius’ treatment of the Jews is discussed at length below.
other methodologies associated with the higher study of Scripture.”¹⁵⁹ The following are sample entries from Theodore and Hadrian’s gloss on the Pentateuch and Sedulius’ Collectaneum:

[Pent 95, Genesis 15:3] Vernaculos: *i. servi domestici qui in domo nutriti sunt.*

[Sedulius, Gal 3:25] NON SUB PEDAGOGO SUMUS. *Nam perfectae aetatis discipuli non indigent pedagogo.*

I have chosen these examples because their scriptural contexts are theologically linked, and each lemma treats the title or role of a person relating to the household. These excerpts reveal the fundamental difference between a gloss and Sedulius’ Collectaneum per their entries. Though both are brief, the gloss here provides the lexical meaning of a word, whereas Sedulius attempts to provide an interpretative understanding of a given word or phrase. Even when Sedulius does highlight only a word, his synonymous explanation(s) are interpretative and not definitive, e.g. Gal 3:20, DEUS AUTEM. *I.e., Christus.* Thus, despite its visible similarity to a gloss, Sedulius’ Collectaneum is a work of interpretative exegesis, and it will prove fruitful to demonstrate the methods used to achieve a plain style.

In his introduction to the critical text, Frede claims, rightly it seems, that Sedulius marks the end of older Irish exegetical methods.¹⁶⁰ It is, however, still important to note that Sedulius does maintain certain Irish characteristics within his Prologue and commentaries. The inclusion of Irish characteristics, but the avoidance of Irish diction within Sedulius’ Collectaneum, is best explained by noting that it is a product of a series of phenomena: 1) the spread of Christianity in Ireland and the development of monastic centers; 2) the scholastic and literary environs in which one would have learned Latin; 3) the rise of the Carolingian empire with its aims of a renovatio of education towards a Christian end; and 4) the Viking attacks and general instability among the

---

¹⁵⁹ Contreni, 2003, 22.
¹⁶⁰ Frede, 1997, 35*.
insular regions, which precipitated Sedulius’ migration into Liège. Enter into these broad strokes the details that 1) Servius’ fourth century commentary on the *Aeneid* enjoyed wide circulation in the Carolingian empire and particularly in Ireland,\(^1\) 2) scholars were afforded the opportunity by libraries of the Carolingian empire to refer directly to patristic sources, and 3) there was a prevailing need for pedagogical commentaries on Scripture.

These particular historical circumstances and phenomena suggest that a work by an Irish scholar living in the Carolingian empire may represent the form and content that mirror works previously studied in Ireland, but whose diction and style are appropriated for and directed toward a general Latin audience, thus fulfilling a pedagogical need. Hence as we shall see, Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* resembles other Carolingian exegetical work through its harmonious and simple presentation of patristic sources, but contains content typical of Hiberno-Latin scholars – though a diction that, for reasons examined below, lacks demonstrably Irish traits – and formatting which, when departing from the norms of his Carolingian contemporaries, is often similar to Servius’ commentary on the *Aeneid*.\(^2\) Evidence for these observations is demonstrated in the following sections: 1) Hiberno-Latin content and diction, 2) Formatting, and 3) Linguistic Style.

### 4.2 Hiberno-Latin Content and Diction

Bengt Löfstedt’s seminal work, *Der hibernolateinische Grammatiker Malsachanus*, provides a survey of linguistic features characteristic of Hiberno-Latin texts. Ten years of further research prompted him to write a follow-up article in which he remarks, “[i]t is natural that grammars and glossaries played a particularly important role in Irish Latinity. Since Latin

\(^1\) Cf. Stok, 15-22.
\(^2\) It must not be forgotten that the macro organizational structure is fundamentally dependent upon Pelagius’ Pauline commentaries as discussed below, in “The Reception of Pelagius”.

65
had never been spoken in Ireland, the Irish had to derive their knowledge to a great extent from written texts only, and their first acquaintance with it was via a school grammar.¹⁶³ The learning of Latin in a literary environ, specifically through exposure to grammars and commentaries, helps explain the Irish predilection for listing and enumerating, allegorical interpretations of numbers, obscure historical minutiae, and general interest in linguistic matters – particularly the “Tres Linguae Sacrae.”¹⁶⁴

Sedulius’ propensity for listing is prodigious. Not only is the entire Prologue organized according to the seven types of circumstance, but there are examples throughout of this habit of mind even on a smaller scale. Some of the lists and enumerations he includes in the Prologue are: “a person is examined in many ways, i.e., by race, citizenship, parents, education…” (Prologue 15-18); “of four emperors: Tiberius, Gaius, Claudius, and Nero” (Prologue 160-162); “the seven principal places” (Prologue 164-165); “there are four types of divine Scripture: history, prophecy, proverbs and simple doctrine…” (Prologue 188-189); and “all divine Scripture is fourfold: history, aetiology, analogy and allegory” (Prologue 201-202). It is not surprising that a Prologue interested in critical matters would entail listing, but it appears throughout his commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians as well, and even in lesser matters. Select examples in the commentaries include: “four types of apostles” (Gal 1:1); “three differences: of type, condition, and sex” (Gal 3:28); “Now, we know nine orders of angels: Angels, Archangels, Powers, Authorities, Rulers, Dominions, Thrones, Cherubim, and Seraphim.” (Eph 1:21); “It must be noted that after the six prohibited faults from above: fornication, impurity, avarice, wickedness, silly talk, scurrility, he has now marked only three, fornication, impurity, and avarice…” (Eph 5:6).

¹⁶³ Löfstedt, 165.
Patristic sources often employed an allegorical interpretation of numbers, a practice the Irish regularly copied. Indeed, Bischoff names this practice as one of the most common traits of Irish exegesis.\textsuperscript{165} Sedulius uses this hermeneutical construct twice in his Prologue and commentaries. In the first instance, Sedulius, receiving Jerome, provides an allegorical interpretation of the numbers ten, seven, and eight. Sedulius claims that Paul wrote ten letters to eight churches in order to harmonize the Old and New Testament,

\begin{quote}
Sed si quis quaeret quare X epistolas ad octo ecclesias scrisit, huic breuiter respondendum est, uit doctrinam Noui Testamenti a decalogo legis non discrepare ostenderet… ut enim septenarius numerus Vetus Testamentum propter diem sabbati frequenter designat, ita et octonarius propter dominicam resurrectionem, quae octaua die resplenduit, gratiam Novi Testamenti exprimit.
\end{quote}

Sedulius’ reference to the eighth day as the resurrection day of the Lord is based on the Jewish calendar, where Sunday is the first day of the week and Saturday (the Sabbath) is the seventh; therefore, resurrection Sunday is the eighth day of the week. Thus ten letters, representing the Decalogue, which represents the Old Testament, and eight churches, representing the resurrection day of the Lord, underscores Paul’s implicit harmonization of the two testaments.

Sedulius’ entry for Gal 1:18 is the second employment of this hermeneutical tool. Sedulius’ entire entry for this verse, excepting the allegorical interpretation of fifteen, derives from Pelagius. Pelagius partitions this verse into four phrases, offering a brief comment for each recited segment. Pelagius’ entry reads (Gal 1:18):

\begin{quote}
\end{quote}

Then after three years. He shows that he did not need to be taught, who already had preached for three years. I came to Jerusalem. Since he was attempting to join the disciples. To see Peter. I.e., for the sake of seeing, not for the sake of learning anything.

\textsuperscript{165} Bischoff, 1991, 86.
And I remained there for fifteen days. And he demonstrates that he was accepted by the former in love, and in a brief time, could not have learned anything.

Sedulius’ entry is very similar to Pelagius’, but with some significant differences (Gal 1:18):

DEINDE POST TRIENNIUM. Ostendit se non indiguisse doceri, qui iam tribus praedicauerat annis. VIDERE PETRUM. Id est, uidendi gratia, non discendi. DIEBUS XV. VII et VIII significant Vetus et Novum Testamentum propter sabbatum et octavum diem resurrectionis dominicae.

First, Sedulius only recites three of the four phrases. Second, Sedulius’ biblical text differs from Pelagius with respect to the first lemma. The most notable difference, however, is Sedulius’ complete omission of Pelagius’ comment for the phrase Diebus XV. After accepting verbatim Pelagius’ comments for the first two phrases, Sedulius inserts his previous allegorical interpretation of the numbers seven and eight, the sum of which equals fifteen, which for Sedulius again represents a harmony between the Old and New Testaments.

None of the other three major sources for his commentary on Galatians (Jerome, Augustine and Pelagius) offer any similar significance for the number fifteen. Jerome does offer an allegorical interpretation of the number fifteen, but it is altogether different from Sedulius’ as Jerome locates its significance with the fifteen songs in the Psalter and fifteen steps which a righteous person must take to sing praises to God in his courts.166 Sedulius’ disregard for the exegesis of Augustine and Pelagius demonstrates his affinity for this hermeneutical construct, and the recourse to his previous allegorical interpretation of the numbers seven and eight demonstrates a conscientious attempt at consistency within his Collectaneum.

Another distinctive characteristic among Irish-trained exegetes is their penchant for including obscure historical minutiae in their biblical studies. Löfstedt and Bischoff point to such material as evidence for their claim that the Irish tend to project a sense of learned

---

166 Hieronymus, Commentarii in epistolam Pauli ad Galatas, 1:18b, 7-9.
superiority among their Carolingian peers. Whether or not the existence of obscure historical minutiae is evidence for pomposity is debatable, but certainly, an Irish person’s Latin training via grammars and commentaries contributed to their general appreciation for such material. Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians are sprinkled with many historical jewels of this type. Below are three examples of this kind of historical detail.

In his entry for Eph 6:21, Sedulius records Jerome’s epithet for Rome: *domina urbium* (“queen of cities”). This epithet for Rome seems to originate with Jerome in his commentary on Eph 6:21 and is subsequently copied only by Bonifacius Moguntinus, Rabanus Maurus, Sedulius, and Atto Vercellensis. All four are Carolingian writers and two of them are specifically Irish. The epithet may have appealed to Sedulius as a rhetorical flourish, on one hand its affirmation of the classical heritage of Rome, and on the other its use of classical vocabulary, as *urbs* was largely replaced by *civitas* and *oppidum* in medieval Latin.

Sedulius’ explicit reference to Aquila in his commentary for Eph 4:28 may also rank as an obscure historical detail. Aquila of Sinope provided an exceedingly literal translation of the Hebrew Bible into Greek around 130. Aquila’s work is most likely known on account of Origen’s (and subsequently Jerome’s) use of and reference to it, but his historical importance as a translator of the Hebrew Bible into Greek is recorded in Isidore’s *De Ecclesiasticis Officiis* (1.12.41-46):

> Post haec secundam editionem Aquila, tertiam et quartam Theodotion et Symmachus ediderunt, ambo Iudaei proseliti; quintam uero et sextam editionem Origenis repperit et cum ceteris supradictis editionibus conparauit. Hii sunt itaque tantum qui scripturas sacras de hebreo in grecum uerterunt.

---

167 Löfstedt, 169; Bischoff, 85-86.
168 Fl. 742; *Epistola XLIX*. Bonifacius Zachariae, PL 89, 0746D.
169 Ca. 780-856; *Enarrationum in Epistolae Beati Pauli*, PL 112, 0447A.
170 Fl. 960; PL 134, 0586A.
171 Elliot, §2.1.
172 Cf. Ewert, 108 and Metzger, 141-142.
After this [referring to the Septuagint] Aquila made the second edition, Theodotion and Symmachus edited the third and fourth, both Jewish proselytes; but Origen found a fifth and sixth edition and compared it with the other editions mentioned above. Thus only these people translated the Sacred Scriptures from Hebrew into Greek.

The explicit reference to the work of Aquila comes from a quotation of Jerome and is not a firsthand quotation. This reference gives the impression, at least to a modern reader, that Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* draws on more sources than are actually used. This practice is not done to deceive the reader, though referencing various authors adds to the perceived erudition of the work, but rather demonstrates his own lack of distinction between first and secondhand sources. A contemporary reader of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* would have known it was a compilation of various sources largely without intratextual attribution, and so retaining a citation found within the source which Sedulius uses indicates a loyalty to the source (in this case Jerome) and is not merely a pompous display of erudition.

A third example may be noted in the appearance of the epithet “Son of Nun”, (Gal 1:1; Frede, 513, 9): *ut Jesus filius Nun a Deo*. “Son of Nun” is an epithet of Joshua found in Deuteronomy 1:38. Origen rendered the Hebrew of “son of Nun” as οἱς Ναῦ and argued that Nave indicated a ship.\(^{173}\) Subsequent Fathers often called the book of Joshua “Jesus Nave”, and based on Origen’s rendering, they saw in Joshua the figure of Jesus the Christ as a ship in which the world is saved.\(^{174}\) While this phrase occurs within ten lines that derive from Jerome, it is not without alteration. Sedulius’ text reads *Jesus filius Nun*, but editions s, m and Jerome’s text all read *Jesus filius Nave*. *Nun* is the Hebraic rendering in Latin. Thus, it is likely Sedulius’ familiarity with this phrase in other sources and possibly even his knowledge of its Hebrew rendering that accounts for the change. Therefore, while it may be categorized under the rubric

---


\(^{174}\) Drum, 524.
of an obscure historical detail, material which links him with Irish exegetes, Sedulius’ use and adaptation of this phrase from Jerome also indicates his desire to harmonize the two testaments, and his appreciation for the *tres linguae sacrae*.

Also commonly noted is the emphasis that Hiberno-Latin commentators place on the biblical languages of Hebrew, Greek and Latin within their exegesis. Robert McNally in his seminal article, “‘Tres Linguae Sacrae’ in Early Irish Bible Exegesis”, traces the use of these languages in Irish exegesis of the early middle ages. He asserts that the Irish, largely through the linguistic work of Jerome and Isidore of Seville, demonstrated a great concern for philological exegesis. These three biblical languages held a profound mystical meaning for the Irish as they were the three languages written on the cross of Christ and for that reason deemed the *tres linguae sacrae*. McNally claims, “[i]t is not an Irish invention, though the repeated recourse to Hebrew, Greek, and Latin in the exegesis of Scripture is peculiar to Hiberno-Latin Bible commentators.”175 This repeated recourse certainly proves true in Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*, as he refers to all three throughout. Greek is referenced three times in the Prologue (42, 47, 84), three times in Gal (1:16, 3:1, 3:27), and twice in Eph (2:3, 4:28). A matter explicitly concerning Latin linguistics or the Latin version of Scripture occurs twice in the Prologue (37, 129), four times in Gal (2:5, 5:8, 5:9, 5:19), and twice in Eph (1:10, 4:28). Hebrew is only referenced five times (Prologue 41, 46; Gal 3:17, 4:6; Eph 4:28). The most notable use of the *tres sacrae linguae* occurs in Eph 4:28, where Sedulius, receiving Jerome, mentions the translation of the word “devil” in all three languages (585, XVIII.21-586, 25, Frede): *Diabolus est Gucem verbum, quod Latine dicitur ‘cricinator’. Lingua vero Ebraica ‘Satanas’ appellatur adversarius sive contrarius, et ab apostolo Belial, id est ‘absque iugo’, quod de collo suo Dei eicerit servitutem; quem Aquila ‘apostata’ transtulit.*

175 McNally, 396.
While the content contains items of interest to a mind trained in an Irish monastic setting, the diction of Sedulius does not betray his Irish heritage. Even two of the most renowned Irish scholars on the Continent, John Scottus and Rabanus Maurus, interspersed their Latin exegetical works with words in the Irish vernacular. Rabanus actually advocates the use of vernacular in scriptural studies, following *doct.* 4.9, when he writes:

Quamvis in bonis doctoribus tanta docendi cura sit vel esse debeat, ut verbum, quod nimis obscurum sit vel ambiguum, latinum esse non possit, vulgi autem more sic dicatur, ut ambiguitas obscuritasque vitetur, non sic dicatur, ut a doctis, sed potius ut ab indoctis dici solet.

Although in good teachers there is, or should be, such care that truth, which is excessively obscure or ambiguous, cannot be [expressed in] Latin, but that it be spoken in the manner of the unlearned so that ambiguity and obscurity are avoided, so let it not be spoken as by the learned, but rather as the unlearned are accustomed to speak.

Sedulius’ departure from fellow Irishmen with respect to inclusion of vernacular words assuredly relates to their respective audiences. This point does not indicate an exclusion of Irish readers of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*, but rather, given the cultural milieu of the Carolingian centers among which Sedulius worked and lived, the audience would have represented multiple ethnicities and backgrounds, with simple Latin serving as the baseline for teaching the Pauline letters. Only a single trace of Irish diction appears in Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians: the presence of *more* as an introduction to a comparison or explanatory clause.

*More* occurs three times in his commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians: twice it is the product of Pelagius (Gal 3:1, 4:14), who emigrated from Britain but is likely of Irish descent, but the third is very likely Sedulius’ own (Gal 3:19). Sedulius writes in lines IIII.180-183 for Gal 3:19:

---

179 Herren and Brown, 12.
Quare ergo data est lex, dum non in illa promissio est nec implet promissionem nemo que per eam saluat? Ad quod respondet: Lex propter transgressionem posita est, et more pignoris fuit, donec ueniret semen.

These four lines were unattributed in Frede’s *apparatus fontium*, but both their format and the existence of *more* suggests Irish authorship, and therefore are probably Sedulius’ own lines. The question-answer schema is a favorite mode of presentation among Hiberno-Latinists,\(^{180}\) and his use of *more* as a rhetorical and explanatory break in the intra-scriptural citation reveals the furniture of his mind, which is decidedly Irish.

### 4.3 Formatting

Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* is formatted in such a way as to provide a succinct, didactic reading experience. While the Prologue is written in continuous prose with the seven circumstances acting as a template for topics, the commentaries are written with a blend of both complete sentences and synonymous, interpretative phrases. Sedulius, working sequentially through each verse of a given epistle, first recites only the portion of the biblical verse to which his ensuing comments pertain. This practice marks the first major visible difference between Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* and the other Carolingian Pauline commentaries. In Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* often only a fragment of a biblical verse is quoted and subsequently treated; whereas, for the early patristic commentators as well as the other Carolingian Pauline commentators, the recitation of an entire verse is the norm. E.g., Eph 3:2 in the Vulgate reads, *si tamen audistis dispensationem gratiae Dei, quae data est mihi pro vobis*. Sedulius’ entry for that verse reads: *SI TAMEN AUDISTIS. Si tamen firmiter retinetis me in vobis dispensationem accepisse doctrinae.*

After the abbreviated recitation of the biblical verse, five notable formatting features typically emerge in Sedulius’ text: the use of 1) *et reliqua*; 2) *id est*, *hoc est*, or *ut est*; 3) a relative pronoun; 4) a synonymous phrase in the same noun case or personal verbal voice as used in the biblical lemma; and 5) guide words such as *aliter, aut, sive, vel* and *item*.

1) *Formula for Citation of Biblical Text*

The phrase (*et) reliqua* appears periodically at the end of a quoted portion of a biblical verse, as occurs in Sedulius’ entry for Gal 1:20: QUAE AUTEM SCRIBO VOBIS reliqua. *Quae scribo vera sunt et Deo testante confirmo*. Using *reliqua* may seem superfluous since Sedulius rarely recites the entire biblical verse, but there is a pattern to his usage. He employs this phrase specifically when his comments pertain to the rest of the verse as well, but for the sake of brevity he stops his recitation. The Vulgate for Gal 1:20 reads, *Quae autem scribo vobis, ecce coram Deo quia non mentior*. Sedulius’ comment for this verse relates more to the omitted portion than to the provided lemma, and the use of *reliqua* alerts the reader to this possibility. Sedulius’ use of *reliqua* is distinct among the four Carolingian commentators mentioned above. Alcuin, Claudius, Rabanus and Haimo each quote the entire portion of the verse with which they are concerned. Though an entire epistle is not always accounted for, the exceptions are few. Rabanus does infrequently use *reliqua* for brevity, but only when making an intra-scriptural reference as part of his commentary on a given verse. For example, in his entry for Romans 1:3 (*de Filio suo, qui factus est ei ex semine David secundum carnem*) Rabanus writes,

> Noveramus ergo Christum secundum carnem, id est, secundum carnis mortalitatem, antequam resurgeret; sed nunc jam non novimus, quia sicut dicit idem Apostolus, ‘Christus resurgens a mortuis, jam non moritur, et *reliqua* (Rom. VI).’

Therefore we had known Christ according to the flesh, i.e., according to his mortal flesh, before he was revived; but now we already knew, because – as it were – the Apostle says the same thing, ‘Christ rising again from the dead, dies now no more, etc.’
Rabanus quotes Romans 6:9, but he omits (by virtue of *et reliqua*) the latter half of the verse, which is *mors illi ultra non dominatur*. His argument here hinges on the quoted portion and not that which is represented by *reliqua*.

The Carolingian glosses employ *reliqua* similarly; however, it occurs with much less frequency. The work that Sedulius’ use of *reliqua* most closely resembles, by virtue of frequency and function, is Servius’ commentary on the *Aeneid*. The feature is actually employed more often in Servius than Sedulius, and the following is an example of its occurrence in the former: (444) *FATA CANIT et reliqua.*

*Et reliqua* refers to *foliisque notas et nomina mandat*, which is the remainder of the verse and signifies the other two ways (by writings and signs) through which the future is predicted.

This stylistic difference from contemporary Pauline commentaries and its association with Servius complements the earlier argument that the setting for the use of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* is likely within a classroom, and ultimately in the mold of school commentaries for classical works.

**ii) Formulae Used for Explaining**

Besides immediate entry into a third person explanation, Sedulius typically utilizes one of three formats in the presentation of his comments: the use of 1) *hoc est* and *id est*; 2) a relative pronoun; and 3) a synonymous phrase in the same noun case or personal verbal voice as used in the biblical lemma.

*Hoc est* and *id est*, and occur throughout Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* with high frequency. They are typically employed after the biblical lemma has been quoted and serve to introduce his

---

comments. This pattern is a common practice in the commentary genre, including many of the early Latin biblical commentaries (e.g., Marius Victorinus, Jerome, Augustine and Pelagius all use them) and continued through the medieval period. Thus, their employment is not a stylistic feature particular to Sedulius or even the other Carolingian commentators.

Formatting features more particular to Sedulius’ Collectaneum are: his practice of beginning his comments with the use of a relative pronoun, or his use of a synonymous phrase in the same noun case or personal verbal voice as used in the biblical lemma. Neither the other extant Carolingian commentaries on the Pauline epistles, nor the early patristic biblical commentaries employ these techniques; however, both are occasionally found in biblical glosses from the seventh to ninth centuries, though the use of the relative pronoun to initiate comments occurs with greater frequency.

Sedulius uses these features prominently and effectively. It allows him to make a point succinctly without repeating words or superfluously introducing his comments, as the example from his entry for Gal 3:14 demonstrates: UT POLLICITATIONEM SPIRITUS reliqua. Quae per Joel omni carni promissa est, id est, universe generi humano, ut: Effundam de Spiritu meo super omnem carnem. Alcuin, e.g., does not utilize this practice often and may thus repeat the phrase to which his immediate comment pertains, as occurs in his commentary for Titus 1:6-7:

SI QUIS EST SINE CRIMINE, UNIUS UXORIS VIR, FILIOS HABENS FIDELES, NON IN ACCUSATIONE LUXURIAE, AUT NON SUBDITOS PECCATO. OPORTET ENIM EPISCOPUM SINE CRIMINE ESSE, TANQUAM DEI DISPENSATOREM. Primum enim sine crimine sit…

IF ANY MAN IS WITHOUT CRIME, THE HUSBAND OF ONE WIFE, HAS FAITHFUL CHILDREN, NOT ACCUSED OF EXTRAVAGANCE, OR SUBMISSIVE TO SIN. FOR A BISHOP MUST BE WITHOUT CRIME, AS THE STEWARD OF GOD: For first, let him be without crime…
The recitation of the entire verse, and in this case two verses, requires that he first address the phrase about which he is immediately concerned: *Primum enim sine crimen sit*… The necessity to repeat a phrase is what Sedulius’ employment of a relative pronoun effectively eliminates.

Perhaps Sedulius’ most distinctive characteristic with regard to formatting is his retention of the personal voice of the verb or case of the nouns as they occur in the biblical lemma. For example, Gal 1:6 reads (514, 1.30-31, Frede), MIROR QUOD SIC. *Nescio quae vos aura a fidei rectitudine deflectit*. *Nescio* mirrors the personal voice of *miror*, and the rest of the comment provides a brief synopsis of the larger underlying problem that gave Paul occasion to write Galatians. This stylistic choice of retaining the voice of Paul allows him to place words in the Apostle’s mouth and ultimately provides an intuitive and effectively short, simple sentence as opposed to a longer one drawn out by an historical exposition of the problem raised in these early verses of the epistle. Without this stylistic feature, the other Carolingian Pauline commentators are demonstrably more verbose. For example, Claudius writes in his entry for Galatians 1:6,

MIROR QUOD TAM CITO TRANSFERIMINI, AB EO QUI VOS VOCAVIT IN GLORIAM CHRISTI, IN ALIUD EVANGELIIUM, QUOD NON EST ALIUD. Enumeratis beneficiis mirari se dicit Apostolus….

I AM AMAZED THAT YOU ARE SO QUICKLY DEPARTING FROM HIM WHO CALLED YOU INTO THE GLORY OF CHRIST, FOR ANOTHER GOSPEL, WHICH IS NOT ANOTHER. The Apostle says that he is amazed by enumerable privileges…

Where Sedulius merely retained the voice of Paul to succinctly relate his commentary, Claudius was forced to preface his commentary with a phrase that artificially lengthens his entry by referring to the speaker of the lines, *mirari se dicit Apostolus*….
We see the same characteristic in Gal 1:8 when Sedulius writes (514, I.38, Frede), SED ET SI NOS. *Id est, evangelizaverimus.* Sedulius uses the first person plural in *evangelizaverimus* to echo the *nos* from the recited biblical verse. By retaining Paul’s voice in the implied verb of the recited biblical text, he cursorily emphasizes his exegetical point through the tense and mood of *evangelizaverimus*. An example of Sedulius retaining the case of the noun(s) of the recited portion of the biblical verse to create a brief entry occurs in Gal 1:14. Here Sedulius writes (515, II.11-12, Frede), *PATERNARUM TRADITIONUM. Id est, non Dei mandatorum.*

The use of these latter two features occasionally makes Sedulius’ commentary visibly similar to biblical glosses of the same time period. These formatting structures are intermixed with conventional commentary entries resulting in a brief composition, but one whose content mirrors the interpretative work of comprehensive commentaries.

*Presenting alternative and supplemental interpretations: Use of Sive:, Vel:, Aliter:, Aut:, Item:,*

Sedulius typically offers a brief interpretation per biblical lemma. A single interpretation may be comprised of multiple authors, but nonetheless Sedulius will have presented the amalgamation of their work as one, simple interpretation.182 However, in accordance with his contemporary Carolingian exegetes, Sedulius also periodically offers multiple interpretations for a single lemma, an asset generally not located in the glosses. The second and sometimes third interpretation may either supplement the previous interpretation, or more commonly, it may offer an alternative interpretation. To introduce the second or third interpretation, Sedulius uses one of five guide words: *Sive:, Vel:, Aliter:, Aut:, Item:*, which serve to introduce an alternative interpretation, and *Item:*, which signifies a supporting argument.

---

182 For further discussion of Sedulius’ reception of sources, see pp. # below.
Sedulius’ use of these five guide words is consistent throughout his commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, and a pattern emerges. *Sive* is the exception among these words as almost every instance is not to be attributed to Sedulius but nearly always derives from Pelagius’ commentaries.\(^\text{183}\) Pelagius uses *Sive* to introduce an alternative interpretation, as occurs in his commentary for Galatians 2:19,

\[\text{EGO ENIM PER LEGEM LEGI MORTUUS SUM. Per legem Christi legi litterae. Siue: Per ipsam ueterem ipsi sum mortuus, quia ipsa se cessaturam esse praedixit.}\]

\[\text{FOR I AM DEAD TO THE LAW, THROUGH THE LAW. I died through the law of Christ to the law of the letter. Or rather: through the old law itself, I died to that law, because the law itself prophesied of the letter, that it was about to end.}\]

Here *Sive* indicates a second interpretation for the biblical phrase *per legem legi*. Sedulius copies this entry almost verbatim: \[\text{EGO ENIM PER LEGEM LEGI MORTUUS SUM. Per legem Christi legi litterae. Siue: Per ipsam ueterem ipsi sum mortuus, quia ipsa se cessaturam esse praedixit.}\]

*The only difference between Pelagius’ entry and Sedulius’ is the transposition of *sum mortuus* to *mortuus sum*, which is presumably a stylistic edit that simplifies the Latin for an elementary reader.*\(^\text{184}\)

The other three guide words which indicate an alternative interpretation, *Aliter*, *Vel*, and *Aut*, are embedded within the commentary after an initial interpretation has been offered and consequently anticipate an alternative interpretation, as occurs in Sedulius’ entry for Gal 5:12:

\[\text{VTINAM ABSCIDANTVR! Hoc est, utinam a malo in bonum conuertantur! Vel: Vtinam totis potius uirilibus suis castrentur, qui modicam corporis partem circumcidi praedicant! Aliter: Vtinam aliqua uindicta tales a uobis penitus separentur, ne uos ultra conturbent!}\]

In the above passage, Sedulius presents three possible interpretations for his lemma. *Hoc est*, introduces the first, which offers a moralizing metaphorical interpretation for “circumcision”.

\(^{183}\) The exceptions occur in Gal 1:16 and Eph 5:30, inclusions which are by Sedulius.

\(^{184}\) Cf. below, #:#, for further discussion regarding Sedulius’ penchant for simplifying the syntax of his sources.
*Vel:* introduces the second, which offers a more literal interpretation of “circumcision” that is ultimately directed towards the bodies of the deceivers. *Aliter:* indicates the third, which mirrors the first metaphorical interpretation, but to a literal end with respect to the physical effect of “circumcision”, i.e., bodily separation.

*Aut:* , which is not exhibited in a protracted example above, is used the least. There are only four occurrences of this word as an introduction to alternative interpretations within Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians. *Sive* is generally tied to Pelagius, *Vel* is occasionally the product of another writer, but *Aliter* and *Aut* are exclusively attributable to Sedulius, inasmuch as they do not derive from the source of the ensuing interpretation. There are no perceptible patterns to his use of these four words with respect to indicating any varying degree of difference within the interpretation, and ultimately his choice between them seems arbitrary. Also, they typically, though not always, signify the use of a different author. Although these words uniformly perform the same function within the text, I do not translate them with the same word. In my following translation of the commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, *Sive:* is translated as *Or rather:*, *Aliter:* as *Alternatively:*, *Vel:* as *Or:*, and *Aut:* as *Or alternatively:.*

Sedulius’ use of these formulae reveals a distinct difference in the composition of his commentaries compared to the other Pauline commentaries of the Carolingian era. Not only do Claudius, Alcuin, Rabanus, and Haimo each typically offer lengthier explanations per lemma, with fewer offerings of alternative interpretations, but their methods of presentation differ from Sedulius as well. Alcuin and Claudius write the fewest number of alternative interpretations within their commentaries on the Pauline epistles. Each uses *Aliter:* only twice, otherwise they introduce an alternative reading in similar fashion:
O INSENSATI GALATAE, QUIS VOS FASCINAVIT NON OBEDEIRE VERITATI? Dupliciter hic locus intelligi potest: vel ideo insensatos Galatas appellatos, a majoribus ad minora venientes, quod incoeperant spiritu, et carne consummabantur; vel ob id, quod unaquaesque provincia suas habeat proprietates…

O FOOLISH GALATIANS, WHO HAS BEWITCHED YOU NOT TO OBEY THE TRUTH? This passage can be understood in two ways: either the Galatians are called senseless, as they move from greater to lesser matters in that they began in a spiritual manner, and they near the end in a fleshly manner; or on the other hand, each province has its own characteristics…

Similarly Alcuin writes,

NON PERCUSSOREM: quod quidem et simpliciter intellectum aedificat audientem, ne facile manum porrigat ad caedendum vel ad arma prorumpere: sed altius consideratum melius aedificat, ne aliquid episcopus efficiat, quod mentes intelligentium et videntium offendat…

NOT VIOLENT. This may be simply interpreted as, that he edify the mind of the one hearing, lest that one easily extend his hand to kill or to rush to arms; but a subtler and better interpretation is, that the bishop may do nothing to offend the minds of the ones who understand and see…

Claudius dedicates his commentary on Galatians to the abbot, Dructeramnus, who is both the patron and likely (initial) intended reader of Claudius’ commentary. This dedication to a single person is possibly the reason for its lengthy explanations of one lemma and the lack of alternative explanations (perhaps more necessary in a pedagogical setting), which mitigates his need for formulaic words and formats. Alcuin’s commentary is formatted similarly to Claudius’, and though he does not say to whom or for what purpose he composes his commentary on Titus, the similarities to Claudius and differences from Sedulius’ text suggest it was intended not for a classroom setting, but for individual study.

Rabanus and Haimo both employ aliter formulae to indicate alternative readings, but with less frequency than Sedulius. Rabanus uses Aliter autem: and simply Aliter:, but also inserts throughout various phrases, such as potest et hoc aliter intelligi and quod ille aliter.

185 Claudius of Turin, PL 104, Col. 0865D.
186 PL 100, Col. 1014D.
intelligit. Haimo likewise employs aliter: and vel aliter: as well as phrases such as Hoc dupliciter intelligi potest. Haimo’s and Rabanus’ commentaries on the Pauline epistles were likely written for classroom use and their propensity for formulaic expressions to indicate alternative interpretations supports such a claim.

Sedulius is the only Carolingian Pauline commentator who employs Vel:, Aut:, and Sive: singularly and with the same function as Aliter:, and whose longer expressions for indicating an alternative interpretation occur less regularly than his employment of these four words. Extensive use of these words as a formulaic expression is not exclusive to Sedulius. Servius’ commentary on the Aeneid also employs all four words regularly in a patterned format; however, Sedulius’ imitation of Servius is slightly adapted. Servius often employs Aliter: to indicate an alternative expression with the same meaning as found elsewhere in the Aeneid, whereas Sedulius uses Aliter: to introduce an alternative interpretation, either by the same source, or more often, a different author. An example of Servius’ employment of this formula follows:

(437). TALIBVS ORABAT aut simpliciter accipiendum 'loquebatur': aut 'orabat' ideo, quoniam preces inmixtae erant: aliter multa Iovem manibus (supplex orasse supinis).¹⁸⁷

SHE WAS PRAYING IN SUCH A WAY. Either: it must be simply understood as “she was speaking”, or therefore “she was praying”, since prayers had been offered. Alternatively: many times he humbly prayed to Jove with raised hands [4.205].

Above, Servius identifies another verse within the Aeneid (in this instance from 4.205), which contains an expression with a similar meaning, or, specifically here, a different description of the same activity – prayer. As a commentator of poetry, Servius is inclined to reveal an alternative intratextual expression of a similar activity (perhaps often dictated by constraints of meter), whereas Sedulius is explicitly a collector (hence Collectaneum) of exegesis who is inclined

simply to offer various interpretations. Thus, both authors regularly employ the formula *Aliter:* to indicate an alternative, but Sedulius adapts the lexical value of this formula to his genre.  

The above excerpt also demonstrates how Servius employs *aut, vel* or *Sive... vel.* Servius typically pairs *aut* with *aut,* or *vel* with *vel,* or *sive* with *vel,* but like Sedulius, they serve as formulaic guide words indicating various possible interpretations or meanings.

*Item:* is a guide word commonly appearing in Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, whose occurrence anticipates an interpretation which buttresses the previous explanation and often signifies a new source. The following is a typical example (from Sedulius’ entry for Eph 1:9; Frede, 557, 67-72),

> Inter propositum et praedestinationem hoc interest, quod praedestination est alicuius rei praefiguratio multo ante in mente eius, qui distinat quod futurum sit, propositum vero, cum uicina sit machinatio et pene cogitationem sequatur effectus. *Item:* Praedestination est gratiae praeparatio, gratia vero est ipsa donatio.

Lines 67-71 are a quotation from Jerome’s commentary on Ephesians, but lines 71-72, are taken from Augustine’s *praec.* 19.974. *Item* is Sedulius’ own word, which introduces a similar interpretation of predestination, but by another source – Augustine.

Because Sedulius’ explanations are often brief, the employment of *Item* in such a manner is an anomaly among the extant Carolingian Pauline commentators. The other five commentators often included exhaustive comments per lemma; therefore, they needed no verbal marker, such as *Item,* to signify a supplemental comment. There is an alternative function of *Item:* in Sedulius’ *Collectaneum,* which is to cite a parallel passage of Scripture. The other Carolingian commentators on the Pauline epistles share this practice, though again with less

---

188 Sedulius does occasionally use *Aliter:* precisely as Servius does, i.e., to indicate an alternative expression of the same meaning elsewhere in Paul’s writing, cf. Eph 5:15, where Sedulius writes, “Alternatively: Carefully, i.e., discerning good and evil.” “Discerning good and evil” is a partial quotation of Hebrews 5:14.
brevity, e.g., in Claudius’ commentary on Titus, he writes *Item alio loco*, before citing a passage from 2 Corinthians 5:21.

Not surprisingly, Sedulius’ employment of *Item* mirrors Servius’. Servius uses *item* to cite an intratextual example of his argumen. Where *aliter* references a parallel passage or theme of a given line, *item* is employed with particular reference to his own commentary.\(^\text{189}\) These words might be translated in Servius’ commentary as “elsewhere” (*aliter*) and “likewise” (*item*). The use of *item* occurs throughout Servius’ commentary, but one example is found in I.9.5-6:

TOT VOLVERE CASUS. *Id est, casibus volvi… dare classibus austros, cum ventis naves demus, non navibus ventos; *item*: animumque labantem impulit, hoc est, impellendo fecit labantem.

TO ENDURE SO MANY CALAMITIES. I.e., to be encircled by calamities… *To give south winds to the navy*, since ships move only by winds, not winds by ships; likewise: *he persuaded the waiving soul*, i.e., he made it waiving, by impelling it.

Thus, where the formatting features of Sedulius’ commentaries differ from the other extant Carolingian Pauline commentaries, a similarity may be noted in Servius’ construction of his commentaries on the *Aeneid*: a limited recitation of a verse, the use of (*et) reliqua*, short explanations per lemma, and the uses of the five guide words mentioned above.

### 4.4 Linguistic Style

Ludwig Traube famously said, “There is no such thing as Medieval Latin.”\(^\text{190}\) While those writing in the approximate (and conventionally labeled) time frames of classical, late antique and medieval eras do not have separate linguistic existences, they do however represent, e.g., slight changes in syntax and grosser differences in orthography and vocabulary. Because Sedulius employs sources ranging from each of these eras (and some late antique writers who

\(^{189}\) Sedulius also mirrors Servius’ use of *ut est*, which is a third way that both authors introduce an intratextual citation.

\(^{190}\) Sidwell, 2.
emulate classical authors), this section will evaluate the extent to which Sedulius retains the distinctive elements represented by the various sources, or if he alters their syntax, vocabulary and orthography according to the conventions of his own time period. Specifically, the construction of indirect statements and indirect questions, the change in use and meanings of prepositions, the substitution of vowels, and the development of new words are common points of divergence. As a control, I will compare the constructions used by the sources to lines which are specifically attributable to Sedulius.

i) Multiple Constructions

The common construction for an indirect statement in classical Latin is “accusative plus infinitive”. Later Latin, however, often uses “quod plus indicative or subjunctive” to introduce an indirect statement. Both constructions are found within Sedulius’ commentaries. Perhaps more striking is that both constructions are found in consecutive sentences each from a different source. In his entry for Gal 2:11, Sedulius writes (520, III.6-8, Frede): *videns quod contra Evangelii regulam ageret. Hoc autem totum agit ut ostendat se nunquam circumcisionisuisse factorem…*. The *videns quod… ageret* is a later Latin construction, but immediately after Sedulius employs a more classical style by using the “accusative plus infinitive” construction: *ostendat se…uisse*. The “quod plus subjunctive” construction derives from Clm 6235, but the “accusative plus infinitive” construction derives from Pelagius.

A similar example occurs in the Prologue and within lines that are attributable to Sedulius. Sedulius employs both constructions in consecutive sentences and then quotes Jerome, who employs the classical construction, resulting in three consecutive indirect statements. In lines 33-36, which are attributable to Sedulius, he writes (2, Frede), *itaque sciendum est quod*
Saulus, ut quidam arbitrantur, ante perceptam fidem nominatus est; quod omnino falsum esse Hieronimus in expositione epistolae ad Philemonem Colosensem declarat his verbis dicens. The later Latin construction occurs with *sciendum est quod Saulus*. . . . nominatus est, with the classical construction immediately thereafter, *quod omnino falsum esse*... declarat. The following sentence is taken from Jerome (2, Frede, 36-38), which reads: *Neque uero putandum est, ut a simplicioribus Latinis legitur, Saulum ante dictum esse et non Saul*. . . . Jerome’s classical construction of the indirect statement mirrors Sedulius’ sentence in line 33, as both authors begin with a passive periphrastic in the main clause and *Saulus* as the subject in the indirect statement, and yet Sedulius employs the later Latin construction. One may conclude here that Sedulius’ embracing of a conglomerate style applies not only to Sedulius’ copying of sources, but to his own writing as well.

One construction found in both the Prologue and the commentaries, which is rare and typically found only in archaic and then again in later Latin, is the employment of an indicative verb in an indirect question. The usual construction for an indirect question is an “interrogative plus subjunctive”, as occurs in Sedulius’ entry for Eph 6:2. Quoting Jerome, Sedulius writes: *quaeritur quare nunc dixerit.* Quaeritur with the interrogative *quare* initiates the indirect question, which is completed with the perfect active subjunctive, *dixerit*. However one occasionally finds otherwise in both the commentaries and Prologue. In the Prologue (75-83), Sedulius constructs an indirect question modeled after Jerome’s prologue to the Pauline corpus, a work from which Sedulius heavily excerpts (lines 89-128 of Sedulius’ Prologue are nearly verbatim from Jerome’s prologue to the Pauline letters, lines 27-53); however, Sedulius asks “why ten letters to eight churches”, whereas Jerome is strictly concerned with “why only ten letters.” Jerome’s indirect question here is composed similarly to the one Sedulius copies in Eph

86
6:2, but with the interrogative *cur: quaeritur cur non amplius quam decem epistulas ad ecclesias scripsit*.\(^{191}\) Sedulius slightly changes the question to fit his own purposes, but also modifies it syntactically: *Sed si quis quaerat quare X epistolas ad octo ecclesias scripsit*…. Here one would expect to read *scripsit*, which is the perfect active subjunctive, but the indicative, *scripsit*, is used. Likewise, in the commentary on Gal 1:15, Sedulius draws from Clm 6235 (515, II.15-17, Frede), *Et hic quaeritur, cur Paulus ab utero segregatus ecclesiam persequitur et Petrus a Christo electus abnegat Christum*…. The interrogative is *cur*, and normally we would expect the two main verbs, *persequitur* and *abnegat*, to be in the subjunctive mood; however, they are indicatives.

Another example of Sedulius employing varied styles of Latin composition occurs within his commentary on Gal 1:17. Sedulius uses both a classical construction and a later Latin construction for denoting entry into a city. In classical Latin, prepositions were not used with names of cities, towns, small islands or the nouns *domus, humus* and *rus*; however, later Latin writers would often employ a preposition in those instances. Thus the phrase in line 29, *neque veni Hierosolimam*, is a classical construction; however, in lines 30-36 Sedulius uses the preposition *in* before all of the city names; e.g., in line 30 virtually the same phrase appears as the one in line 29, but this time with the preposition *in: non venisse in Hierosolimam*. The presence of prepositions before a city is not unusual given the date of Sedulius’ commentaries; however, Jerome, whose exegesis Sedulius is here excerpting, does not employ the prepositions. Thus, changing Jerome’s composition was a grammatically conscientious decision and likely to aid a reader not familiar with the syntactical complexities of classical Latin, a tactic that suggests Sedulius is more concerned with the comprehension of the reader than syntactical cohesion.

ii) Orthographical Matters

Besides varied syntactical constructions, one occasionally also finds within Sedulius’ commentaries orthographic practices common to medieval writers. Examples of this are few, however, as the orthography of Sedulius’ text follows the Zürich witness, MS R,¹⁹² except where Frede and Stanjek normalized the unique Hiberno-Latin spellings based upon readings from the other manuscripts. Thus, the appearance of the common orthographic differences between classical and medieval writers, such as substituting an “e” for an “i” or “u” for an “o” is sporadic at best and void of any pattern. Some differences may be attributable to a later copyist; nonetheless, the text records the following rare spellings. In Gal 3:13, Sedulius’ text, copying Jerome, reads desevit (“ceased”) instead of Jerome’s desivit. This is an irregular perfect form of desinere instead of the more regular desivit or even desiit. Desivit is the form used in mss. “F” and “S” and editions s and m. The CC text of Jerome (77A) has desivit and lists no variant readings. The spelling of words in their archaic form as opposed to the forms found in the respective source is also a sporadic element in Sedulius’ commentaries and is seen in the following examples: adortatus (extremely rare) in line 94 of the Prologue, which is likely a variant for adhortatus, from adhortor. Also aethimologia, which looks like etymologia, but is likely derivative of aetiologia (Prologue, 200; a direct transliteration from its original form in Greek). Other examples are tonicam for tunicam (Eph 4:28, 513,9), and hiruphin for cherubin.

These combinations of varied syntactical styles and sporadic orthographic elements further demonstrate the multifarious nature of Sedulius’ commentaries, and whatever renovatio of the classical heritage that was sought through the use of sources and formatting was evidently not applied syntactically in the composition of his Collectaneum.

¹⁹² Frede, 14*-16*.
iii) Simplification

Claudius of Turin defended his simplified style by quoting Augustine’s *doct. 4.11.26, In lectione enim divina non est amanda verba, sed veritas.*\(^{193}\) The phrase Alcuin used to describe the composition of his commentary on John is *cautissimo plane stilo.*\(^{194}\) Likewise, Rabanus Maurus, in a letter-preface accompanying his commentary on Chronicles, wrote:

> Non enim longos florentesque tractatus, in quibus plausibilis ludit oratio, sed commentarios in divinas historias scribere decrevi, quorum officium est preterire manifesta, obscura disserere.\(^{195}\)

I did not resolve to write long and flowering treatises, in which the oration teases for applause, but commentaries on divine history, whose duty it is to pass over the obvious and elucidate the obscure.

These are just three of many similar apologies contained in letter-prefaces to biblical commentaries composed during the Carolingian era. Sedulius does not explicitly indicate an aim for providing a simplified composition; however, various features of his Latinity suggest a similar purpose.

One of the overarching characteristics of Sedulius’ style within the *Collectaneum* is his simplification of sources, which may be manifested through a simpler syntax, editing of extraneous and/or advanced content, or an elucidated presentation of material. The following examples typify this practice.

Sedulius demonstrates a proclivity for simplifying the syntax of his sources. In lines 49-50 of the Prologue, Sedulius writes *Paulus, inquit, a Paulo Seregio vocatur.* Sedulius transposes the normal order of *Seregius Paulus’* name, i.e., Sedulius writes *Paulo Seregio* instead of *Seregio Paulo.* The Greek text, the Vulgate, and even Jerome’s discussion of the name in his commentary on Philemon, which Sedulius excerpt, provides *Seregius Paulus* (the order being

\(^{193}\) Claudius of Turin, letter-preface to the commentary on Genesis, MGH Epp. 4:590, 33-34.
\(^{194}\) Alcuin, letter-preface to the commentary on John, MGH Epp. 4:357, 13.
\(^{195}\) Rabanus Maurus, letter-preface to the commentary on Paralipomenon (Chronicles), MGH Epp. 5:423, 27-29.
the notable factor) as the name of the proconsul. Sedulius presumably transposes the order of the names in order to emphasize the *Paulus* portion of *Seregius Paulus*, and ultimately avoids confusion for any reader who is unaware of conventional Roman practices with regard to names.

Lines 85-87 in the Prologue offer a similar example. There Sedulius writes: *Clemens Petri apostoli discipulus sententias Pauli proprio sermone ordinavit atque ornavit*. Sedulius is here copying Jerome, who writes, *vel Clementis Romanae postea Ecclesiae Episcopi, quem aiuntipsi adjunctum sententias Pauli proprio ordinasse et ornasse sermone*. Sedulius places his excerpt under the discussion of the “second circumstance”, but it derives from the same larger passage of Jerome that Sedulius used for the discussion of the “first circumstance” (Prologue lines 19-31). Sedulius’ excerpt contains two notable alterations. He added the apposition, *Petri apostoli discipulus* to the name Clemens, ultimately replacing Jerome’s ecclesiastical nomenclature with a simple description. The second alteration is the arrangement of Jerome’s words into a simpler syntax. The adjective *proprio* is split from the noun which it modifies, *sermone*. Though this construction is not difficult reading for a good Latinist, Sedulius nonetheless simplifies it by moving *sermone* to follow *proprio*. Slight changes such as these occur throughout Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*, and particularly in his commentaries.

There are also numerous examples of Sedulius editing extraneous or advanced content. Jerome’s entry for his commentary on Galatians 3:5 essentially makes three points amounting to thirty lines. The following excerpt of Jerome represents three of Jerome’s thirty lines from which Sedulius drew to compose his entry for the same verse.

…simul ostenditur Galatas, accepto post fidem sancto spiritu, dona habuisse uirtutum id est, prophetiam, genera linguarum, morborum curaciones, et caetera, quae ad Corinthios in donis spiritualibus enumerantur.197

---

196 Hieronymus, *De viris illustribus*, 5.10.84.
Likewise, he shows that the Galatians, by having accepted the Holy Spirit through faith, had the gifts of miracles, prophecy, speaking in tongues, curing of diseases, and other things, which are enumerated among the spiritual gifts in the letter to the Corinthians.

Sedulius edited even this extracted portion of almost thirty lines to compose the following entry (Gal 3:5):

OPERATVR VIRTVTES. Ostendit Galatas accepto per fidem Spiritu sancto habuisse uirtutum, id est, profetiam et genera linguarum.

There is no textual evidence for suggesting that the miracles (virtues) performed (operatur) among the Galatians were actually the spiritual gifts of prophecy and speaking in tongues; nonetheless, Jerome asserts this by linking Gal 3:5 to 1 Corinthians 12:4-11, where Paul enumerates some spiritual gifts. Sedulius omits that portion of Jerome’s commentary, since it merely substantiates Jerome’s claim. Sedulius is by no means opposed to using intra-scriptural references for expositing passages, in fact that is a method he employs pervasively; but rather, the omission of Jerome’s link to 1 Corinthians 12:4-11 is here likely for the sake of brevity and simplicity. The omission reveals a higher concern for the exegetical result than the pieces of evidence marshaled in defense of a given assertion, ultimately resulting in a simplified excerpt of Jerome.

Sedulius edits advanced exegetical content in Eph 4:16 (583, 80-81): Haec idcirco apud nos obscura sunt, quia metaforicos dicuntur. These lines come from Jerome, who writes, idcirco (ut supra diximus) haec apud nos obscuriora sunt, quia μεταφορικῶς dicuntur in graeco.

Sedulius edits Jerome by transliterating μεταφορικῶς into Latin (metaforicos) and then omitting the phrase in graeco (“in Greek”). Thus metaforicos is here acting as an adverb, in the same way as its corresponding Greek form in Jerome’s sentence. Sedulius’ competency in Greek was an exception among his peers, and his editing of Jerome further demonstrates his intent to present his sources in a conceptually and linguistically simplified style.

91
Additionally, Sedulius’ reception of Gregory in Eph 1:21 also demonstrates well Sedulius’ process of simplification. This passage comes from the thirty-fourth Homilia of Gregory the Great, one of the four main authorities of the early Western church, and an early source for identifying the nine orders of angels. Gregory locates the nine orders of angels from various passages in the Bible, an explanation which Sedulius edits out of this passage. Gregory writes Cherubim vero atque seraphin saepe, ut notum est, libri prophetarum loquuntur (“But both Cherubim and Seraphim are often, as has been noted, mentioned in the books of the prophets”). The only mention of Seraphim occurs in Isaiah 6:1-7. Cherubim occurs over sixty times in the Old Testament. Gregory then understands Ephesians 1:21, where Paul writes super omnem principatum et potestatem et virtutem et dominationem (“over all rule and power and authority and dominion”), to be titles of four more orders of angels. “Thrones” is a title he gleans from Colossians 1:16, Qui rursus ad Colossenses scribens, ait: Sive throni, sive potestates, sive principatus, sive dominationes (“Who, again, writing to the Colossians, says: Whether thrones or powers or rulers or dominions”). Regarding the last two titles, “Angels” and “Archangels”, Gregory initially doubts that there are nine orders of angels, because “Angels” and “Archangels” are joined with “Cherubim” and “Seraphim”; however, he concludes through an examination of Ezekiel 28:12-19, which lists nine precious stones made in the likeness of God, that these nine stones represent the nine orders of angels, and therefore “Angels” and “Archangels” form each their own order. A comparison of Gregory’s passage with Sedulius’ passage reveals that Sedulius is not concerned with how Gregory arrives at his conclusion, but more so with the conclusion itself. The version which Sedulius presents is much simpler both

198 CC 141, 305, hom. in evang. 34.7.
199 CC 141, 305, hom. in evang. 34.7.
200 CC 141, 305, hom. in evang. 34.7.
linguistically and conceptually and further suggests that Sedulius intends his work to serve a pedagogical function.

The examples thus far presented illustrate Sedulius’ typical *modus operandi* of simplifying the syntax by rearranging a modifier or omitting extraneous or advanced content. Sometimes, however, Sedulius achieves elucidation by merely reorganizing the order of content as found in his sources. An example of this practice occurs in Gal 3:19. Pelagius writes (Gal 3:19), *In manu mediatoris. Sive Moysi, ut quidam putant, sive Christi: “nam et Moyses,” aiunt, inter Deum et populum medius fuit*. Sedulius likewise writes (Gal 3:19), *IN MANU MEDIATORIS. Sive: Moysi, ut quidam putant; ‘nam et Moyses’, aiunt, ‘inter Deum et populum medius fuit’*. Siue: *Christi*. Every word from Pelagius’ exegesis for this biblical lemma is accounted for in Sedulius’ entry, but Sedulius simplifies the presentation by moving the phrase *Sive: Christi*, so that the reader may more easily follow the flow of the argument.

The Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians contain more extravagant examples of Sedulius’ tendency to simplify his sources, but all of the above examples represent typical changes which occur throughout. The result of his work, as demonstrated above, is a commentary which makes patristic (and later) sources accessible to even an elementary student of these texts and does so with marked brevity.
5 Theological and Ecclesiastical Issues

As transmitters and users of patristic texts, the Carolingians echoed many of the same ecclesiastical and theological debates of their predecessors. Free will, predestination, and transmission of sin are all treated below in the reception study of Augustine and Pelagius, but here I treat the issues of baptism, Jewish-Christian relations, and the trinity as revealed in Sedulius’ Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians.

5.1 Baptism

Though Charlemagne’s policy of capital punishment for pagans refusing baptism was eventually overturned on account of an appeal by Alcuin to Charlemagne in 796, baptism remained a pivotal practice for advancing Christianity among the Carolingian empire. Used as an opportunity for instruction and initiation, baptism was the defining act of an individual which established a person as faithful or infidel: a great concern for the Carolingian empire as it sought to be a wholly Christian society. 201 The extraordinarily high number of extant baptismal expositions from the Carolingian era testifies to both the mystical importance of this sacrament for the Carolingians and their desire to instruct the clergy and through them the laity. 202

Sedulius references baptism nine times in his commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, and through these offers five basic teachings. The first instance occurs in Gal 2:21, where Sedulius copies Jerome’s commentary on the same verse, which projects post baptismal sin as an activity that makes grace invalid. The second teaching on baptism occurs in Gal 4:27, where Sedulius asserts its practice as a fundamental sacrament inaugurated with the new covenant. Similar to this teaching is Sedulius’ claim in Eph 5:26, “IN THE WORD OF LIFE.  I.e., in

201 Keefe, 2002, 2-5.
doctrine after baptism. Or: The word, which is sung by the priest at baptism.” The statement in XXV.9 beginning with “Or:” is Sedulius’ own comment and reflects both the didactic nature of the Collectaneum and, by virtue of its tendentious relation to the text, the Carolingians’ emphasis on the rite of baptism.

The third teaching may be located through an examination of Eph 1:1 and 1:4. In his commentary for Eph 1:1 Sedulius defines a series of terms, a practice employed to deal with philological and theological concerns, which is also a common stylistic feature of Irish exegetes and reflective of their affinity to the scholarship of Jerome, Pelagius, and Isidore.203 In Eph 1:1 Sedulius distinguishes between the terms fideles (“faithful ones”) and sancti (“holy ones”) by using catechumens as an example. There “holiness” is achieved through the sacrament of baptism. In his commentary on Eph 1:4 (lines I.43-47), however, Sedulius distinguishes between the terms immaculatus (“unstained”) and sanctus (“holy”), with “holiness” “achieved by will and zeal” (voluntate et studio comparatur) and uses babies as an example to explain the distinctions involved. Thus holiness is seemingly achieved by two fundamentally different means.

Furthermore the passage in Eph 1:4 seems to deny the doctrine of original sin, as adopted by the councils of Carthage (418) and Orange (529), a teaching which necessitated the practice of infant baptism.

The key to understanding lines I.43-47 then, as commentary congruent with both Eph 1:1 and the orthodox view of original sin, lies in the interpretation of lines I.37-43 and a broader contextualization of Jerome’s thought. Lines 37-40 highlight an apparent inconsistency between Paul’s claims in Ephesians 1:4 (“so that we would be holy and unstained in his presence”) and Ephesians 5:27 (“…the church of Christ will have neither stain nor wrinkle”) with Psalm 142:2 (“Everyone living will not be justified in your sight”). Sedulius (offering his own exegesis in

lines 41-43) justifies this inconsistency by asserting a realized eschatology similar to that which is found in 1 Corinthians 13:12 (*Videmus enim nunc per speculum in aenigmate, tunc autem facie ad faciem; nunc cognosco ex parte*), a construction which Sedulius here echoes (Lines 41-43: *licet etiam in praesenti vita iusti sancti et inmaculati, quamvis non ex toto tamen ex parte non inconuenienter dici possunt*). This theological substructure of Pauline thought is not found in 1 Corinthians 13:2 alone, but is widely evidenced throughout his epistles, and Sedulius clearly uses it.  

Lines 43-47 are then predicated on this understanding of a realized eschatology as applied to the present Christian life, through the interpretation of two terms, *sanctus* (“holy”) and *inmaculatus* (“unstained”). By claiming that babies are *inmaculatus* and nevertheless do not have *sanctitas*, because holiness is achieved through will and zeal, Sedulius, receiving Jerome, seems to deny (as mentioned above) the doctrines of original sin and infant baptism. Jerome, however, himself defends the doctrine of original sin in his *Dialogus contra Pelagianos* (ca. 415), where he follows the teachings of Didymus and holds that original sin is transmitted through the physical act of procreation.  

In that dialogue (CC 80, 1.23.35), Jerome says *baptismum uetera peccata concedit, nouas uirtutes non tribuit* (“baptism annuls old sins, (but) does not bestow new virtues”). In light of this passage of Jerome, one can better understand Sedulius’ exegesis of Eph 1:4 and assume his acceptance of Jerome’s distinctions. Thus Jerome’s and ultimately Sedulius’ juxtaposition of babies, *qui integri sunt corpore* (“who are corporally pure”), with the actions of will and zeal as necessary for holiness indicates an emphasis on voluntary participation towards achieving holiness in the present life. Babies are called unstained (*inmaculatus*), because they are not willfully participating in sin (n.b., Jerome’s

---

204 See Ridderbos, 44-90, who refers to it as a fundamental structure, and also Beker, 29-53.
specific qualification of babies as “corporally pure”), which does not, however, exclude them from the stain of original sin, since within this example Jerome is merely emphasizing their inability to develop neither virtues nor vices.

Likewise holiness may still here begin with baptism as stated in Eph1:1 (through the example of catechumens who believe but have yet to be baptized), but holiness on earth as a form of realized eschatology also entails (again, as seen through Jerome’s statement in his Dialogus contra Pelagians above) the development of virtues through participation in spiritual disciplines and sacraments. Thus Eph 1:1 highlights baptism as the distinctive act between belief in Christ and the inception of holiness; whereas, Eph 1:4 highlights the realized eschatological elements of holiness, a state which requires participatory action, an involvement of the will not within the capabilities of babies.

Sedulius’ fourth teaching on baptism indicates it is a salvific act synonymous with redemption:

Eph 2:5: (III.4-6) HE MADE US ALIVE TOGETHER. Instead of ‘He will make us alive together’. I.e., by forgiving and purging our sins in justice through baptism and faith.

2:10: (V.6) CREATED IN CHRIST. I.e., reborn through baptism.

4:30: (XVIII.21-22) ON THE DAY OF REDEMPTION. I.e., on the day of baptism.

The fifth teaching on baptism derives from Jerome, who polemically references the Valentinians:

Eph 4:5 (XIII.5-6) ONE BAPTISM. Although it is given under three persons; and this against the Valentinians, who say there are two baptisms.

Although the historical reference may have been lost on Sedulius’ readers, dismissing the need for multiple baptisms may have proved necessary in the Carolingian world, where pagan and Gnostic teachings survived and confusion over basic Christian practices was rampant.
5.2 Jewish-Christian Relations

The Jews enjoyed a period of relative peace under the reigns of Charlemagne, Louis the Pious and even Charles the Bald, who ruled over Liège where Sedulius lived and worked. Nonetheless during the reign of these rulers certain sources and events manifested anti-Semitic opinions and agendas. While the secular rulers promulgated seemingly pro-Jewish legislation, the Church’s policy promoted the Theodosian Code and “received its classical formulation by Pope Gregory I.”

Despite this seeming period of peace for Jewish-Christian relations, some historians have asserted that there existed certain signals of the pending persecutions of the later Crusades. In an historiographical essay, D. Malkiel criticized historians largely contemporary to and post World War II for their teleological interpretations of Jewish-Christian relations in Europe from 840-1096. Malkiel argues against their suggestion that certain landmark events or sources prior to the First Crusade were “sign-posts of destruction.” Some of the typical sources used to indicate anti-Jewish activity are Bishop Agobard of Lyon (ca. 779-840), his successor Amulo (Archbishop of Lyons 841, died 852), various church councils – most notably the Meaux-Paris (846) and the annals of Saint Bertin, among others. As Bachrach and then Malkiel demonstrate, these are sources and events of isolated influence, whose veracity in reporting historical details is sometimes considered exaggerated or even dubious; nonetheless, they do reflect a genuine concern among ecclesiastical figures regarding proselytizing by Jews.

---

206 Cf. Flannery, 80-88; Glick, 43-59; Bachrach, 104-119; Cutler and Cutler, 88.
207 Flannery, 88.
208 This is the departure point for Malkiel’s summative essay, 55-83.
209 Malkiel, 55-83.
210 Malkiel, 55.
211 Bachrach, 114-116; Malkiel, 61. The annals of Saint Bertin are anti-Jewish reports written either by Bishop Prudence of Troyes, 835-861, or Archbishop Hincmar of Rheims, 861-882. The latter’s known anti-Jewish activities make him the more probable author.
212 Cf. Glick, 32; Flannery, 88; Bachrach, 132.
Bachrach notes, “...it is not surprising that the thrust of conciliar legislation was aimed at protecting Christians from Jewish missionary activity and at eliminating Judaizing and Jewish customs followed by Christians.”

Malkiel’s argument that the typical sources (specifically those he highlights in his article) do not reveal an undercurrent of anti-Semitism, which led to a climax of persecution endured in the First Crusade, is a valid claim and worthy of note; however, he does not address the apparently general consensus that both secular and Church leaders were concerned with proselytizing by Jews. Malkiel admittedly only evaluates the above typical sources, so I here offer Sedulius (specifically and only in reference to the Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians within his *Collectaneum*) as new data.

Sedulius, as an ecclesiastical witness in the Carolingian context within the realm of Charles the Bald, working with patristic authorities mixed with his own exegesis, accords the Jews a special status in the covenantal history of God’s salvific plan, and does not exhibit any anti-Judaism language which may correlate with anti-Semitic thought. The listed exegesis below may, however, reveal a mild concern regarding proselytizing by the Jews, but such an interpretation certainly does not reflect overbearing attitudes and may only be so construed if the reader is unaware of the socio, political, and religious environs of the biblical text with which Sedulius worked. Such convictions are best interpreted as simply mirroring the concerns of Paul as demonstrated in the scriptural text.

The following table lists all of the explicit references to Jews and Judaism within Sedulius’ Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians (ed. Frede):

---

213 Bachrach, 132.
214 Malkiel, 57, notes, “No new data are offered; on the contrary, my point is that the familiar, traditional sources have yet to receive careful scrutiny in the context of the ‘harbinger’s thesis’.”
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Gal</th>
<th>Eph</th>
<th>Prologue</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1:10 (I.44 Pel; I.47 Sed)</td>
<td>1:11 (I.90 Pel)</td>
<td>ln 26 Jer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:13 (II.6-10 Pel)</td>
<td>1:12 (I.92 Pel)</td>
<td>ln 28 Jer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:16 (II.27-28 Wb)</td>
<td>1:13 (I.97 Jer)</td>
<td>ln 150 AMst</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>1:19 (II.48 Eus/Ruf)</td>
<td>1:22 (II.58 Jer)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:2 (III.5, 7 Sed; III.6 Jer)</td>
<td>2:13 (VII.3 Pel)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:10 (III.22 Pel)</td>
<td>2:15 (VII.27 Jer)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:14 (III.17, 18, 21, 24-25 Sed)</td>
<td>3:1 (VIII.2 Pel)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2:15 (III.28-38 Clm 6235)</td>
<td>3:3 (VIII.8-9 Pel) pro</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:4 (VIII.83 Jer)</td>
<td>3:9 (VIII.54 Pel)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:8 (VIII.102 Pel)</td>
<td>3:26 (VI.21 Aug)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3:28 (VI.23 Pel)</td>
<td>3:28 (VI.23 Pel)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:1 (VII.4 Aug)</td>
<td>4:1 (VII.4 Aug)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:4 (VII.17 Pel)</td>
<td>4:24 (VII.106 Pel)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:25 (VII.114 Wb)</td>
<td>4:25 (VII.114 Wb)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4:26 (VII.127 Pel; VII.133 CAr)</td>
<td>6:1 (VIII.114 Jer)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:12 (XI.26 Sed; XI.27 Sed)</td>
<td>6:12 (XI.26 Sed; XI.27 Sed)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6:13 (XI.29 Pel)</td>
<td>6:13 (XI.29 Pel)</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Per the historical context of Galatians and Ephesians, and even the Prologue which provides an introduction to Paul and his writings, these instances reflect a varied portrayal of Jews and Judaism. There are a number of references in which Sedulius affirms Judaism as a blessed nation with which God has a covenantal relationship, i.e., Gal 3:8, 4:26 and Eph 2:13. Gal 3:26 asserts the equality of both Jews and gentiles, as does Eph 2:15, 3:1, 3:3 and 3:9. Gal 6:12 highlights the Jews as the ones persecuting Paul, but this reference, as with the others denoting the Jews’ blessed status and equality with gentiles, reflects Paul’s own concerns as revealed in the scriptural text.

One implicit reference to Jews and Judaism, which occurs in Gal 3:3, is a strong statement about the foolishness of turning from Christianity to Judaism. This provocative remark, which may be construed to reflect Sedulius’ concern about proselytizing by Jews, is also
a textually based comment – a notion suggested even by the Anchor Bible Series, which is a joint collaboration by Jews and Christians alike.\textsuperscript{215}

If there was a growing adumbration of anti-Semitism which foreshadowed the persecution of the Jews in the First Crusade, it seems likely that Sedulius’ exegesis would have reflected as much. Sedulius’ \textit{Collectaneum}, as repeatedly asserted throughout this project, was likely intended for pedagogical purposes and therefore would have served as an ideal medium to plant seeds of anti-Semitic thought among fellow clergy; but it did not. While further evidence may surface to the contrary within other writers of the same time, it is safe to conclude that there are no indications from the instances listed above that Sedulius employed anti-Semitic thought within his Prologue or commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians. This conclusion does not in the end differ much from Heil’s, who provides a study of ninth century Pauline exegetes, nevertheless some of his arguments require revision.

Heil initially claims that Sedulius’ commentary for Gal 1:10 appears especially anti-Jewish,

Undoubtedly [his] interpretation made sense to Carolingian Christians and his explanation followed his source verbatim, but it is this kind of arguing in short, non-discursive phrases and the slogan-like character of much of the commentary that makes Sedulius’s text appear especially anti-Jewish.\textsuperscript{216}

As discussed above in the chapters on Sedulius’ Latinity and the pedagogical function of his \textit{Collectaneum}, his “short, non-discursive phrases” are a product of his aims and the genre within which he is operating and therefore ought not to be anachronistically misinterpreted as indicating a “harshness of tone”.\textsuperscript{217} Secondly, Heil draws his examples from Sedulius’ commentary on Galatians, a letter which has historically been interpreted as Paul’s defense of his apostleship and

\textsuperscript{215} Martyn, 282-289.
\textsuperscript{216} Heil, 90.
\textsuperscript{217} Heil, 90.
against teachers who claim that the Galatians must follow Jewish practices.\textsuperscript{218} Furthermore, Sedulius’ comment in Gal 1:10 is not tangential to Paul’s argument, but one that is congruent with it as understood by modern commentators.\textsuperscript{219} This comment, thus, reflects more Sedulius’ historical sensibilities, than any supposed anti-Semitism.

Heil ultimately softens his seemingly negative remarks by claiming that for Sedulius and most of the other Carolingian Pauline commentators, “the Jew” serves largely as a theological construct – the “hermeneutic” or “pneumatic Jew”.\textsuperscript{220} Thus, while Heil notes the harsh tone of Sedulius, he nonetheless concludes that he should not be regarded as anti-Semitic.\textsuperscript{221}

\subsection*{5.3 The Trinity and the Divinity of Christ}

Carolingian debates concerning the trinity may be traced to the famous double procession, or \textit{filioque} clause represented in the Athanasian Creed and the amended Nicene Creed.\textsuperscript{222} The phrase \textit{filioque} was added to the Nicene Creed by the Third Council of Toledo in 589: \textit{Credo in Spiritum Sanctum qui ex patre filioque procedit} (“I believe in the Holy Spirit who proceeds from the Father and Son”).\textsuperscript{223} Though widely accepted in the West, it was not officially added to the liturgy until 1017, an adoption which ultimately led to the schism of 1054. The Eastern theologians did not accept the assertion that the Holy Spirit proceeded from the Father and the Son, but the Father alone, who they claimed is the principal being.\textsuperscript{224} Alcuin wrote a polemical work defending the clause in 804,\textsuperscript{225} and then shortly thereafter an event occurred

\begin{footnotesize}
\begin{enumerate}
\item\textsuperscript{218} Esler, 69-92; Longenecker, lxxxviii-xcix; Dunnam, 12-13.
\item\textsuperscript{219} Esler, 118-126; Longenecker, 18-19; Dunnam, 22-25.
\item\textsuperscript{220} Heil, 92-93.
\item\textsuperscript{221} Heil, 90-93.
\item\textsuperscript{222} Haugh, 15.
\item\textsuperscript{223} Cf. Kelly, 1964, 22, 37, 58.
\item\textsuperscript{224} Haugh, 17-19.
\item\textsuperscript{225} Kelly, 1964, 45. Kelly notes Alcuin may not be the author of the polemical work mentioned (PL 101, 73; 82), \textit{De processione Spiritus Sancti}, but if it is not by him then assuredly by one of his contemporaries.
\end{enumerate}
\end{footnotesize}
further heightening the debate. In 808 Frankish monks, who were stationed in Jerusalem, sang the amended Nicene Creed, as was their custom and the accepted practice in the West.\textsuperscript{226} When the Greeks heard the Frankish monks singing the Nicene Creed with the amended phrase \textit{filioque}, they accused them of heresy. The monks then alerted Pope Leo III of the dispute and pointed to verse 23 of the Athanasian Creed in their defense, which reads: \textit{Spiritus sanctus a Patre et Filio, non factus nec creatus nec genitus sed procedens} (“The Holy Spirit is from the Father and the Son, not made nor created nor begotten but proceeding.”).\textsuperscript{227} The Pope then notified Charlemagne, who took decisive action by ordering Theodulf of Orleans to study the matter and report to the council at Aix-la-Chapelle (809). Theodulf, in true Carolingian fashion, created a \textit{collectaneum} of the Latin Fathers’ writings in support of the emendation and read it to the Frankish bishops congressed at the council, which consequently confirmed the added clause.

The trinity and \textit{filioque} clause, however, continued to be an issue of debate throughout the ninth century as writers such as Theodulf (d. 821; PL 105, 247; \textit{De spiritu sancto}), Ratramnus of Corbie (d. 868; PL 121, 247; \textit{C. Graec. oppos.}), and Aeneas of Paris (d. 870; PL 121, 701; \textit{adversus Graecos}) all wrote polemical pieces in defense of the amended Nicene Creed.\textsuperscript{228} None of the writings produced by the Latin church, however, changed the mind of Photius of Constantinople (if he even read them), who inveighed against the Latin church and subsequently caused a schism in 867. While the acceptance of the creed in the West into the mass was delayed for various reasons, its fundamental doctrine, first developed by Augustine,\textsuperscript{229} was largely accepted. It is in the midst of this heated debate that Sedulius composed his \textit{Collectaneum}.

\textsuperscript{226} I here follow Lagarde and Lagarde, 427-429.
\textsuperscript{227} Kelly (ed. and tr.), 1964, 19.
\textsuperscript{228} Kelly, 1964, 45.
\textsuperscript{229} Kelly, 1964, 80–90.
The issue of the trinity and divinity of the Father and Son appears in the Galatians and Ephesians commentaries by Sedulius. Sedulius does not mince words when confirming the divinity of Christ. Commenting on Galatians 3:20 (“Now a mediator is not for one party only, whereas God is only one.”), Sedulius writes (530, III.190-193, Frede), DEUS AUTEM. *Id est*, Christus. *UNUS EST. Ideo hoc addidit, ne quis putaret Christum ab unitate divinae naturae divisum, quia meditoris suscepisset officium.* In this verse Sedulius, receiving Pelagius, states the matter plainly. The exposition, *Id est, Christus* directly confirms the divinity of Christ. However, it should be noted that Sedulius includes the explanatory phrase of God, *Id est, Christus*, on his own initiative. The phrase is implied in Pelagius’ exposition of the verse, which Sedulius quotes after *UNUS EST*. Pelagius’ exposition of Galatians 3:20 reads (322, 2-6, Souter),


The mediator however is not of one. Not of one part, because he was mediating between God and the human person. God however is one. He therefore added this lest anyone think that Christ has deep down been divided from the unity of divine nature, because he had taken on the duty of the mediator.

Sedulius apparently notices that Pelagius substitutes Christ for God after the phrase *Deus autem unus* est to defend the divine relation of the Father and Son. Thus, Sedulius’ commentary reinforces this implication by inserting the phrase *Id est, Christus* directly after DEUS AUTEM, as seen above. Augustine’s exposition makes the same assertions, but in a lengthier explanation, and Augustine actually makes an explicit reference to the trinity. In his commentary on Galatians 3:19, Augustine likens Galatians 3:19-20 to 1 Timothy 2:5, which as Plumer notes

---

230 I think Augustine also served as a source for this clause and Sedulius’ understanding of the verse, but it is Pelagius’ words he most closely follows.
becomes a “central Christological text” for Augustine in his later writings (164-66, 4.4-7, Plumer ed. and tr.),

Mediatorem Jesum Christum secundum hominem dici ex illa eiusdem apostoli sententia fit planius, cum ait: Unus enim deus, unus et mediator dei et hominum homo Christus Jesus. … Nam si filius dei in naturali aequalitate patris manere vellet nec se exinaniret formam servi accipiens, non esset mediator dei et hominum, quia ipsa trinitas unus deus est, eadem in tribus, patre et filio et spiritu sancto, deitatis aeternitate et aequalitate constante.

That Jesus Christ is called mediator according to his human nature is made clearer by the same Apostle when he says: [1Tim. 2:5] For there is one God, and there is one mediator between God and human beings, Jesus Christ, himself a human being. … For if the Son of God had wished to remain in natural equality with the Father and had not emptied himself, taking the form of a slave [Phil. 2:7], he would not be the mediator between God and human beings, because the trinity itself is one God, with the same eternity and equality of deity remaining without change in three: Father, Son and Holy Spirit.

The thematic and verbal parallels as well as the sequence of argument displayed between Augustine’s exposition and Pelagius’ lead me to believe that Pelagius abbreviated Augustine’s exposition. Sedulius then, aware of both commentaries, abbreviated Pelagius’, but with a mind toward both in his simple phrase *Id est, Christus*, since his custom is to provide a curtailed synopsis without stripping the theological import.

The second portion of Sedulius’ exposition of this verse, which comes after *UNUS EST*, is a nearly exact quote from Pelagius and directly addresses the divine nature of Christ and his unity with God, thus confirming Augustine’s developed theology of the trinity, as revealed both in his commentary on Galatians and in his other writings.  

Sedulius’ commentary on Ephesians also addresses trinitarian issues and the divinity of Christ, most evidently at Ephesians 4:6 (“One God and Father of all who is over all and through all and in all.”). This verse proves an interesting study of Sedulius’ choices in selection and

---

231 Plumer, 165 n. 102.
232 Many scholars cite Augustine as the original developer of trinitarian thought for the Latin church. See Kelly, 1964, 90, and more recently Ayres’ forthcoming work, *Augustine and the Trinity.*
reception, and ultimately, of his doctrinal agenda, as he is faced with two very different
expositions of the verse as presented in Pelagius’ and Jerome’s commentaries, both of which
Sedulius pervasively uses throughout his Collectaneum.

Pelagius writes for Ephesians 4:6 (363, 9-13, Souter),

Unus deus et pater omnium. Etiam eorum qui ex gentibus crediderunt. Qui super omnes
et per omnia et in omnibus nobis. Super omnes virtutes ut [omni]potens, per omnia opera
sua qui[a] immensus, in omnibus Christianis secundum sanctificationem qua habitare
dignatur.

One God and Father of all. Even of those who out of the gentiles believed. Who is over
all people and through all things and among us all. Over all powers as all powerful,
through all his own works because he is immense, among all Christians, according to
sanctification, through which he deigns to live among them.

This exposition by Pelagius highlights the omnipotent and salvific power of God. The important
matter to note here is how Pelagius understands the prepositions. He takes them to signify
various attributes of the one God and Father, but does not extend to them any trinitarian
meaning.

Jerome, however, does suggest that the three prepositions denote the three persons of the
trinity. Jerome writes in his commentary on Ephesians 4:6 (PL 26, col. 0497B),

sic aestimant esse referendum, ut super omnia Pater sit, quia auctor est omnium: per
omnes, Filius, quia per Filium creato sunt omnia: in omnibus, Spiritus sanctus, ipse enim
credentibus datur, et templum sumus Spiritus sancti: et Pater et Filius habitant in nobis.

Some think the words, ‘Over all and through all and in all,’ refer to the Father, the Son,
and the Holy Spirit in such a way that the Father is over all things ‘because he is the
author of all things,’ the Son is through all because all things have been created through
the Son, and the Holy Spirit is ‘in all’ for he is given to believers, and we are the temple
of the Holy Spirit, and the Father and the Son dwell in us.\footnote{Heine (tr.), 171.}

Jerome continues his exposition of this verse by offering alternative interpretations; however, it
is the above portion which Sedulius edits and inserts for his Collectaneum. The force of relating
the three prepositions to the three persons of the trinity is to equate them to the “One God and
Father of all”, which is the preceding clause in verse six. While Jerome gives many possible interpretations, including one similar to Pelagius’, Sedulius only provides the latter by Jerome and omits his qualifying phrase sic aestimant esse referendum... (“Thus some think the words refer…”). Thus, Sedulius’ entry for Eph 4:6 reads (579, XIII.7-10, Frede),

QUI SUPER OMNES EST. Super omnia Pater, quia auctor est omnium; per omnes Filius, quia per ipsum creat sunt; in omnibus Spiritus sanctus. Ipse enim credentibus datur et templum eius sumus.

The omission of Jerome’s qualifying phrase and thus Sedulius’ choice to provide only this interpretation reveal a mind inclined towards a certain doctrinal agenda, i.e., affirming the western principles regarding the trinity. The relevance of this reading, in connection with the debate discussed above, is how these prepositions define the role of each figure and also ultimately how this reading presumes a unified ontological relationship between the three persons in reference to the one God and Father.

These two examples taken from Sedulius’ Collectaneum reveal that Sedulius not only has an understanding of the important theological categories regarding the trinity, but also of the broader ecclesiastical issues at stake. Ultimately, his selection and reception of Jerome, Augustine, and Pelagius demonstrate an active attempt at furthering the western ideals of the trinity at a time when East and West sharply disagreed regarding this profound, and divisive, issue.
6 Studies in Reception

6.1 Sources

English readers interested in the theological scholarship of Sedulius Scottus, emanating from both a Carolingian and Hibernian setting, may locate the value of Sedulius’ Prologue and his commentaries of Galatians and Ephesians in their reception of older formative religious writers like Jerome, Augustine, Pelagius, et al. A study of Sedulius Scottus’ *Collectaneum* is essentially a study in reception. The selection, the reframing of arguments, the editing, and the occasional original comment are all features which one can highlight as the achievements of both Sedulius and the libraries with which he worked, but, without the sources the *Collectaneum* by definition does not exist. Therefore, a reception study of Jerome, Augustine, and Pelagius – Sedulius’ three main sources for the Prologue, Galatians, and Ephesians – proves to be an integral component of an overall understanding of Sedulius’ work. Before examining the reception of Jerome, Augustine, and Pelagius, I will 1) offer some preliminary remarks about Sedulius’ range of sources, 2) suggest improvements upon Frede’s *apparatus fontium*, and 3) explain Sedulius’ method of citation.

Frede notes ten different authors that Sedulius draws from for the Galatians and Ephesians commentaries and three more in the Prologue who are not used in those commentaries. The authors range from Origen (185–ca. 254; via Rufinus) to Isidore (ca. 560–636). Some authors, like Isidore, Eusebius, and Boethius are rarely used, while others such as Jerome, Augustine, and Pelagius are employed quite frequently. It is the latter three authors whose reception will be studied more closely in the following sections. Also, in the following reception study, it must be remembered that Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* is of a particular type, and

---

234 I tabulated these numbers from the footnotes in Frede’s critical text (1997) of the Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians.
his reception practices should not be confused with other theological *collectanea* or even *sententia* (such as Isidore’s or even Peter Lombard’s, to name two prominent medieval examples). Similar to theological *collectanea* or *sententia*, Sedulius uses a wide range of sources, which is a testament to the Carolingian libraries of Rhineland and Sedulius’ reputation and mobility as a scholar; however, Sedulius draws mostly from commentarial works for his exegetical *Collectaneum*. As tables 1 and 2 demonstrate, Sedulius does draw from other genres of work, but again, the majority of content derives from commentaries. For this reason, the nature of exegetical *collectanea* is different from *collectanea* on certain theological issues. The latter have an agenda of specific theological purpose, whereas Sedulius’ agenda is to draw out the best exegesis (from the sources he has available) for each verse. Thus Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* mirrors early Latin commentators in that they lacked a systematic theological approach and instead sought to explain words or phrases of the biblical text, verse by verse. On this matter, it is helpful to note Jerome’s defense against allegations of being an Origenist. Jerome claimed to admire Origen’s exegesis, but maintained that his admiration did not extend to Origen’s doctrines. Implicit in this defense is an important distinction in early biblical commentators between biblical exegesis and theological doctrines. Only occasionally with the early biblical commentators, and subsequently Sedulius, are larger theological issues drawn out within their exegesis. Nonetheless, one can, through Sedulius’ editing of certain key passages (which I will demonstrate below), detect his theological tendencies on certain issues.

---

235 See # above for the general overview and development of *collectanea*.
236 Rosemann, 17-19.
237 See pp. # above where I discuss Sedulius’ reputation among his peers and what Traube and later scholars call “The circle of Sedulius.”
238 See p. # above.
i) Frede’s Apparatus Fontium

Frede’s *apparatus fontium* is both thorough and accurate; however, occasionally I have revised or amended his work. Nowhere have I found Frede’s attribution to be wrong; however, newer editions of some of the sources have become available since the publication of his text (1997): e.g., he sites the PL version of Jerome’s commentary on Galatians, but in 2006 the CC published a critical edition of that work (vol. 77A edited by Giacomo Raspanti). Therefore, my source citations throughout these reception studies refer to the standard critical text (in the case of Jerome – the CC text) and not the PL. For all of the citations of Pelagius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians I have followed Frede’s practice of referring to Souter’s critical text by giving the page number then the line.

Regarding the unattributed lines in Frede’s edition, I entered the text into the PL, TLL and CLCLT databases. This practice did not reveal any new findings; however, I did on occasion, independent of the databases, find sources for some of the unattributed lines. I accept the remaining unattributed lines as Sedulius’ own, since it is customary for biblical *collectanea* of this time to contain some original exegesis.

I have three improvements to offer upon Frede’s *apparatus fontium*:

1) Gal 1:1-2 (1.18-21) deriving from Augustine’s *exp. Gal. 2.6*:

(Aug.) ideo enim cum dixisset: et deum patrem, addidit: qui suscitauit illum a mortuis, ut etiam ex hoc modo breuiter iam a clarificato missum se esse commemoraret. Gratia vobis et pax a deo patre et domino Iesu Christo. Gratia dei est, qua nobis donantur peccata….

(Sed.) QVI SVSCITAVIT EVM A MORTVIS. Ideo commemorat Deum Patrem qui suscitauit eum a mortuis, ut per hunc uirtutem sui apostolatus commendet, dum ab ipso Patre missus est. GRATIA VOBIS. Qua gratis nobis donantur peccata.

Lines 18-20 may be more aptly described as an influence, but the key words and ideas in Augustine’s passage are found in Sedulius’, and the link is strengthened by the direct quote from
Augustine in the subsequent verse and line (Gal 1:2, I.21). It is possible that Frede overlooked these verses in Augustine’s commentary as a source for Sedulius, but it is more likely that he deemed the lexical links as too loose a connection based upon the pattern of Sedulius’ reception elsewhere. If lines 18-20 are an instance of Sedulius receiving Augustine and not merely a case of Augustine broadly influencing Sedulius, then it serves as one of the more highly edited selections of Augustine by Sedulius; but line 21 assuredly derives from Augustine and is near verbatim per usual.

2) Gal 3:23 (VI.7-8) deriving from Augustine’s exp. Gal. 26.8:

(Aug.) conclusio enim eorum erat timor unius dei.

(Sed.) CONCLUSI. Id est, timore unius Dei.

3) Gal 6:14 (XI.34-36) deriving from Augustine’s exp. Gal. 62.8:

(Aug.) Mundus mihi crucifixus est, ait, ut me non teneat et: ego mundo, ut eum non teneam, id est ut neque mundus mihi nocere possit neque ego de mundo aliquid cupiam.

(Sed.) MVNDVS CRVCIFIXVS EST. Id est, ut me non teneat. ET EGO MVNDO. Vt eum quasi mortuus non teneam neque concupiscam.

Regarding example three, Sedulius’ line 34 seems to be a clear borrowing as does the beginning of line 35. Sedulius’ rendering of Augustine’s final phrase, id est ut neque mundus mihi nocere possit neque ego de mundo aliquid cupiam into neque concupiscam is a typical maneuver by Sedulius for the purposes of abbreviating and simplifying the content within his Collectaneum.

ii) Method of Citation

Sedulius intratextually cites seven names of biblical scholars and commentators within the Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, but he never mentions Pelagius,
whom he copies most. Sedulius may refrain from mentioning Pelagius, despite summarily using him as a source, because Pelagius was not in good standing with the Church and mentioning his name could have devalued Sedulius’ work. This reason is not completely satisfactory, however, since Sedulius mentions Origen three times within the text of the Prologue. Rather, the reason is likely connected to Sedulius’ method in composing his Collectaneum. The nature of an exegetical collectaneum on the Pauline epistles dictates that Sedulius will likely draw from many exegetical works on the Pauline epistles, as he does. Thus, the citations of authors or works are actually the exceptions. All of the explicitly cited authors or works within Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians fit into two categories: either the cited material is merely retained in Sedulius’ borrowing of another source as occurs with his citation of Eusebius and Origen via Rufinus and Aquila via Jerome; or, the author or work employed is exceptional. For example, Sedulius’ entry for Eph 2:15 is expected to derive from some other commentary on Ephesians 2:15. However, for that verse Sedulius unexpectedly draws from Jerome’s commentary on Habakkuk, so he alerts the reader by writing, “[l]ikewise in the exposition of Habakkuk”. Similarly, for Eph 4:13, Sedulius draws from Augustine’s civ., and therefore cites that work before quoting from it. Therefore, since all of Sedulius’ borrowings of Pelagius within Galatians or Ephesians come from Pelagius’ commentaries on Galatians or Ephesians, then the use of Pelagius is never exceptional and does not warrant an explicit citation.

240 The authors mentioned by name are Jerome (Prologue 19, 35, 45; Gal 2:15), Ambrose (Prologue 57; Gal 4:25), Origen (Prologue 152), Augustine (Prologue 200; Gal 2:15; Eph 4:13), Clement “the disciple of Peter” (Prologue 85), Eusebius (Gal 1:19), and Aquila (Eph 4:28).
241 Prologue 152–170 (7-8, Frede).
6.2 Introduction to the Reception of Jerome, Augustine, and Pelagius

Though the commentaries contain very little of Sedulius’ own scholarship, his learning and creativity are revealed through his selection of others.\textsuperscript{242} In order to appreciate the faculties and editorial skill of Sedulius as revealed in the reception of Jerome, Augustine, and Pelagius, it is first necessary to briefly note certain details concerning their lives, works, and standing within the church as they have a storied and interwoven past.

Jerome, who wrote commentaries on Philemon, Galatians, Ephesians, and Titus (in that order) sometime around 386-388, was the first of the three to compose commentaries on the Pauline letters.\textsuperscript{243} While dissenters as to Jerome’s effectiveness and utility within the Latin tradition of theology exist, his attention to historical, archaeological and especially linguistic issues in exposition remain as his renowned strengths.\textsuperscript{244}

Augustine then, with Jerome and others\textsuperscript{245} as his predecessors, wrote his commentary on Galatians between the writing of his two seminal hermeneutical works \textit{util. cred.} (ca. 391) and \textit{doctr. chr.}, which was begun around 396-397 and completed in 427. Once Augustine had read Jerome’s commentary on Galatians, and while he was composing his own commentary on the epistle, Augustine wrote to Jerome (ca. 394, \textit{ep.} 28 in the Augustine corpus and \textit{ep.} 56 in the Jerome corpus) concerning Jerome’s exposition of the Peter and Paul confrontation mentioned in Galatians 2:14 (“But when I saw that they were not straightforward about the truth of the Gospel, I said to Cephas in the presence of all, ‘If you being a Jew, live like the Gentiles and not like the Jews, how is it that you compel the Gentiles to live like Jews?’”). This letter was the first of many between the two men for the next ten years. Their correspondence contains florid

\textsuperscript{242} My own studies affirm this opinion, which is also held by Frede, 1997, 37*.
\textsuperscript{243} Heine, 7.
\textsuperscript{244} Campenhausen, 180-181.
\textsuperscript{245} For a discussion of the influences on Augustine for the writing of his commentary on Galatians, cf. Plumer, 7-59.
complements and encouragements each to the other as well as points of disagreement on theological and doctrinal issues. Despite many of their differences, they were united in their fight against Pelagius. Their unity of mind on this matter is revealed in Jerome’s dialogue Against the Pelagians written in 417, when he writes (III.19, tr. Fremantle),

That holy man and eloquent bishop Augustine not long ago wrote to Marcellinus… two treatises on infant baptism, in opposition to your heresy which maintains that infants are baptized not for remission of sins, but for admission to the kingdom of heaven, accordingly as it is written in the Gospel, … He addressed a third… and recently a fourth to Hilary against this doctrine of yours, which is full of perversity. And he is said to have others on the anvil with special regard to you, which have not yet come to hand. Wherefore, I think I must abandon my task, for fear Horace’s words may be thrown at me, ‘Don’t carry firewood into a forest.’ For we must either say the same as he [Augustine] does, and that would be superfluous; or, if we wished to say something fresh, we should find our best points anticipated by that splendid genius.

Though von Campenhausen claims that “the modern reader must conclude with astonishment that Jerome had not the slightest understanding of the real issue in the controversy, and stood much nearer in his attitude in the matter to Pelagius than to his alleged confederate Augustine!”, nonetheless Jerome himself believed that he was aligning with Augustine as revealed in the above excerpt and stood at odds with the Pelagians.

Pelagius was the last of these three to write his Pauline commentaries. Pelagius, like Jerome, is known as one of the Roman commentators, as there were a number of early Latin commentators who lived and wrote in Rome during the late fourth and early fifth centuries. Pelagius wrote his commentaries in Rome sometime between 405 and 410. De Bruyn notes that Pelagius’ expositions of the Pauline letters were influenced by a wide range of commentators and writers such as Tertullian, Augustine, Eusebius via Rufinus, Jerome, et al.

---

246 Campenhausen, 169.
247 De Bruyn, 10-11.
248 De Bruyn, 2-7.
6.3 Reception of Jerome

This study is especially relevant in view of the recent surge in scholarship on both the life and Rezeptionsgeschichte of Jerome, which reveal a man of embattled personal relationships alongside a long history of critical onlookers. His once close friend, Rufinus, accused him of heresy. Augustine, perhaps the most famous of his contemporaries, often vigorously disagreed with him. Luther too offers scathing remarks about Jerome and modern scholars are rarely any gentler. A recent publication, Jerome of Stridon, takes issue with a number of long standing presuppositions surrounding Jerome and even his reception. While this erudite collection of essays offers profound revisions of previous scholarship, it does not address the historical anomaly of Jerome’s sterling reputation within the Carolingian empire. At no point in history does Jerome enjoy a more unbridled appreciation of scholars than that which occurred in the Carolingian empire. The producers of the Vivian Bible (844 – 851), or “first Bible of Charles the Bald,” included scenes from the life of Jerome alongside two New Testament scenes, two Old Testament scenes, scenes from the life of Paul, a picture of David playing the harp, and lastly a dedicatory scene of the Abbot Vivian giving the Bible to Charles the Bald. Honoring Jerome amongst actual characters of the Bible may seem surprising to modern readers, but as McNally claims, “By far the most influential book in the Middle Ages was the Bible, translated by St. Jerome into Latin and known throughout Europe as the Vulgata Latina.” Jerome is often praised for his erudite translation of the Bible, but a study of Sedulius’ reception of Jerome should shed additional light on the enormous extent to which Jerome was valued as an expositor

---

249 See Campenhausen, 129. There he writes “Alongside his brilliant qualities, the weaknesses of his character were always manifest. This was already seen by his contemporaries, and to this day his biographers have not found it easy to narrate his life without polemic or apologetic prejudice.” One biographer, Kelly, writes, “It is a pity that his vanity made him claim to be even more widely read than he was, and that his tendency to rush work made him slipshod and careless.” Kelly, 334.
250 Hinks, 112.
251 Cf. Hinks (above, note 1), 113.
252 McNally, 7.
of the Bible at a time in which its study impacted virtually every area of life. I shall also contrast Sedulius’ reception of Jerome with that of Augustine and Pelagius.

Sedulius’ Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians are ideal texts for studying the reception of Jerome. In the first place, Sedulius quotes Jerome, who names these two letters as two of the three that must particularly be read in a prefatory statement for his commentary on Ephesians.\(^{253}\) Second, Jerome only wrote full commentaries on four Pauline letters: Philemon, Galatians, Ephesians and Titus. Therefore, in order to fully gauge the value of Jerome as an exegete within these selections of Sedulius’ work, it is imperative to examine the Pauline letters on which Jerome himself wrote commentaries.

\(i\) Reception of Jerome in the Prologue

The introduction to Servius’ commentary on the *Aeneid* is likely the literary model for Sedulius’ Prologue, but the content mostly derives from various works of Jerome. Frede identifies six different works from Jerome which Sedulius uses as source material: 1) *Lives of Illustrious Men*, 2) the *Commentary on Daniel*, 3) the *Commentary on Philemon*, 4) the *Book of Hebraic Questions*, 5) the *Book of Names*, and 6) his *Epistle 49* to Pammachius. Sedulius explicitly cites Jerome seven times in the Prologue, and in fact almost one-third of the total lines are taken from, or are influenced by, Jerome’s works.\(^{254}\) Out of the seven times that Sedulius explicitly mentions Jerome’s name in the text, three times Sedulius also gives the title of the work from which he is quoting. The seven different explicit quotations of Jerome can be divided into three categories of comments: linguistic (3), historical (3) and literary critical (1). There is only one section which Frede identifies as coming from Jerome in which Sedulius does not give attribution to Jerome in the text. I will now examine all seven citations, the one section where

\(^{253}\) See the introductory paragraph to Sedulius’ commentary on Ephesians, (8, 182-186, Frede).

\(^{254}\) I calculated these figures using the footnotes in Frede’s critical text.
Jerome is not named in the text, but Frede has identified as deriving from Jerome, and another passage which I have discovered as emanating from Jerome.

After Sedulius introduced and listed the seven types of circumstance, he immediately turns to Jerome for information to use in each respective circumstance. The first circumstance is *quis*, i.e., the person, so in line 19 Sedulius begins his presentation of information and here uses Jerome as an historical authority (2, Frede), *Itaque Hieronimus de Paulo sic dicit:* (“Thus Jerome says about Paul the following:”). The next thirteen lines are a direct quote from Jerome’s *De viris illustribus* (*ill.*) and contain a mixture of scriptural and non-scriptural traditions. Jerome begins his biography of Paul by relating the scriptural materials, but then adds non-scriptural traditions for further information. Jerome differentiates between the two in his presentation of this material with the sentence, *Et quia in Actibus Apostolorum plenissime de eius conversatione scriptum est, hoc tantum dicam…* (“And because a most full account of his life has been written in the Acts of the Apostles, I only say this…”).255 Sedulius omits this sentence, and thereby the distinction, and thus apparently presents all of the material on equal ground as known historical truths with the first words of line 32, *His praecognitis* (“these things being known”). This example reveals the extent to which he considered Scripture as historical truth, but equally the authority he grants to Jerome.

Sedulius then transitions by borrowing two lines from Ambrose256, which he introduces with the phrase, *ut quidam arbitrantur* (“as some think”). Then, in another concentrated block of twenty-one lines, Sedulius again quotes directly from Jerome. In this second section, Sedulius uses Jerome to establish a point contrary to what some think regarding the Apostle’s two names “Saul” and “Paul”. It is within this block of twenty-one lines that we find all three instances in

255 # Find citation in Frede of this sentence and insert here.
256 Sedulius names Ambrose in the text, but the work he uses as a source actually comes from the writer we now call Ambrosiaster, who wrote commentaries which were often wrongly attributed to Ambrose in their early circulation.
which Sedulius includes the given title of Jerome’s work from which he is drawing his information. In line 35 Sedulius introduces the quote from Jerome by writing (2, Frede), *Quod omnino falsum esse Heronimus*\(^{257}\) *in expositione epistolae ad Philimonem Colosensem* [sic] *declarat his verbis dicens:* (“Jerome in his exposition of the letter to Philemon the Colossian, declares this to be completely wrong saying in these words:”). It is within this block of writing (35-44) that Sedulius reveals himself as a stringent copier of Jerome, when he retains whatever morphological form of Judea that Jerome uses. Thus, in line 39, Sedulius copies Jerome’s learned Hebrew form, *Juda*, and not the late Hellenistic form *Judea*, which is used in line 20 (*Judeae*), since that is how it appears in Jerome’s *ill. 5, 3*.

Then in line 45, after another two-line insertion from the work of Ambrose, Sedulius transitions into a different point about the names “Saul” and “Paul” and again uses Jerome as the authority (3, Frede), *Sed notandum, ut Heronimus in tractatu Danielis ait,* (“but it must be noted, as Jerome says in his *Commentary Tractate on Daniel*”). By alerting the reader to the new source of Jerome which he is using, Sedulius provides an organizational feature which helps guide his reader as well as add continuity between the various materials from Jerome on the same subject. Furthermore, this passage reveals Sedulius as an astute editor of Jerome. The phrase *Paulus, inquit, a Paulo Seregio vocatur*\(^{258}\) is not a direct quote from Jerome, but is a summary statement of about ten lines from Jerome’s commentary on Philemon. Sedulius’ employment of *vocatur* is justified by Jerome’s use of *diceretur*, which Sedulius copies as seen in line 54. Acts 13:7 reads that Saul “was summoned” by Seregius Paul, with the Greek using the participial phrase “οὖτος προσκαλεσάμενος,” rendered as *hic accitis* in the Vulgate.

Thus this tradition, that Paul was named after Seregius Paul, is perhaps just an assumption based

\(^{257}\) This unusual spelling of Jerome’s name occurs throughout Sedulius’ Prologue, with the exception of line 19, where Sedulius uses Hieronimus.

\(^{258}\) Lines 49-50.
upon Acts 13:9, which states for the first time that “Saul…is also Paul…,” and its contextual relationship with the Seregius Paulus story.\(^{259}\) The third break comes again with a quote from Ambrose in line 56, but this time Sedulius cites Ambrose in the text after reminding the reader that the previous portion was from Jerome. Then in the following sentence Sedulius again, for the third and final time, explicitly names both Jerome as well as the given work from which he is quoting within the text (3, 56-62, Frede):

\[\ldots\ et\ hoc\ secundum\ Heronimum.\ Ceterum\ secundum\ Ambrosium\ Saulus\ inquietudo\ sive\ temptatio,\ Paulus\ vero\ quietus\ interpretatur.\ Illud\ etiam\ non\ est\ omittendum,\ quod\ Benjamin\ prius\ Benoni,\ hoc\ est\ filius\ doloris\ mei\ nominatus\ est,\ ut\ Heronimus\ in\ libro\ Ebraicarum\ questionum\ ostendit,\ quoniam\ ipso\ nato\ Rachel\ mater\ defuncta\ est;\ propter\ eam\ vero\ Jacob\ eum\ Benjamin,\ hoc\ est\ filium\ dexterae\ nominavit.\]

The above excerpt demonstrates Sedulius’ unhesitating affirmation of Jerome as a learned and qualified expert in biblical history and language. All five of the above instances of Sedulius citing Jerome could be categorized in terms of language or history. The sixth instance of Sedulius explicitly citing Jerome is no different.

In line 85, Sedulius defers to Jerome in the matter of which language Paul used in composing his letter to the Hebrews. Sedulius draws from Jerome’s *Lives of Illustrious Men*, particularly chapter 5, which discusses Saul, who became Paul the Apostle. In a gerundive denoting a mandate of high importance, Sedulius introduces the testimony of Jerome (4, 83-87, Frede),

\[Illum\ quoque\ sciendum\ quod\ apostolus\ has\ omnes\ epistolas\ praeter\ unam\ ad\ Ebreos\ Greco\ sermone\ Heronimo\ testante\ conscripsaret\ atque,\ ut\ idem\ testatur,\ Clemens\ Petri\ apostoli\ discipulus\ sententias\ Pauli\ proprio\ sermone\ ordinavit\ atque\ ornavit.\]

This quotation further reveals the extent to which Sedulius respects Jerome’s claims in the matter of language and history. The authorship of Hebrews was continually contested throughout the history of the Church and had many advocates for and against Paul as the author. Jerome’s own

\(^{259}\) PL 26, 604B-C.
discussion on the matter is not as simple as Sedulius represents. Jerome covers various theories concerning Paul’s authorship of Hebrews before revealing his own opinion. Jerome writes,

The epistle which is called the Epistle to the Hebrews is not considered his, on account of its difference from the others in style and language, but it is reckoned, either according to Tertullian to be the work of Barnabas, or according to others, to be by Luke the Evangelist or Clement afterwards bishop of the church at Rome, who, they say, arranged and adorned the ideas of Paul in his own language, though to be sure, since Paul was writing to Hebrews and was in disrepute among them he may have omitted his name from the salutation on this account. He being a Hebrew wrote Hebrew, that is his own tongue and most fluently while the things which were eloquently written in Hebrew were more eloquently turned into Greek and this is the reason why it seems to differ from other epistles of Paul. 

A comparison then of Jerome’s discussion and Sedulius’ version of the same passage shows Sedulius’ affinity for brevity and simplicity. Sedulius does not include the wider debate concerning the issue, but rather is content with only providing the theory to which he subscribes, i.e., that Paul originally wrote the letter in Hebrew, but that Clement then translated it into Greek. Furthermore, lines 83-84 of Sedulius’ Prologue actually originate not from Jerome’s discussion of the letter to the Hebrews (ill.5.10.84), but from the same section of ill. (5.1) that Sedulius copied in lines 19-31, though with some slight alterations. Sedulius added the apposition *Petri apostoli discipulus*. This demonstrates Sedulius’ concern for detail and accuracy as Jerome took for granted that his reader would know he was referring to Saint Clement I or Pope Clement I, who is mentioned in Philippians 4:3, and not Clement of Alexandria (ca. 150-211/216). Sedulius obviously assumed that his readers, possibly less advanced students, might not be aware of the precise identity of the Clement mentioned.

The seventh explicit citation of Jerome references him not exclusively as an expert on language or history, but as a reader of Scripture. Sedulius takes a passage from Jerome’s forty-

---

ninth epistle, one to Pammachius, and in it reveals Jerome’s prowess as a reviewer and critic of Paul in a literary manner.

Sed quis ignoret qualitatem seu modum apostolicae doctrinae sapienter et eloquenter profundeque esse digestum? Unde et Heronimus Paulum, inquit, apostolum proferam, quem quotienscumque lego videor mihi non verba audire sed tonitrua. Legite epistolae eius et maxime ad Romanos, ad Galathas, ad Effesios, in quibus totus in certamine positus est, et quocumque respexeris fulmina sunt. Heret in causa, capit omne quod tetigerit, tergum vertit ut superet, fugam simul ut occidat.\textsuperscript{261}

Sedulius’ use of this quote not only reflects his approval of Jerome’s opinion, but of Jerome as an authoritative literary person himself. The review of Paul’s writing is a powerful piece by Jerome, and Sedulius inserted it as the centerpiece for his discussion of the sixth type of circumstance, “the quality of the work.”

There is another section which Frede identified as influenced by Jerome, but it is not cited by Sedulius within the text.\textsuperscript{262} In lines 131-138 (6, Frede) Sedulius presents a series of definitions for the name places of each of the Pauline letters. What ensues is an erudite explanation of the meaning of these cities in the Latin tongue.


As Frede’s notes indicate,\textsuperscript{263} this section is compiled by Sedulius from multiple passages of Jerome’s \textit{Book of Names}. Sedulius uses portions ranging from chapters 148, 29-159, 7. This vast amount of material in Jerome’s work is succinctly narrowed down to eight lines in Sedulius’ Prologue. One reason why Sedulius did not cite the work as Jerome’s in the text could be

\textsuperscript{261} Prologue, 8, 182-188, Frede.
\textsuperscript{262} Frede notes in the \textit{apparatus fontium}, 6, that lines 131–138 of the Prologue are from various sections of Jerome’s \textit{Book of Names}.
\textsuperscript{263} See n. # above.
because of the massive amount of editing used to arrange it in the form as it appears. In the other cases where Sedulius cited Jerome in the text, and even in the few instances where he named only the work from which he was drawing, Sedulius never edited on this scale. A change to this degree is unprecedented in Sedulius’ usage of Jerome as a source.

The discussion above concludes the eight passages that Frede lists as emanating from Jerome, but I have discovered a ninth example containing a thematic link as well as lexical parallels. Lines 75-83, which Frede presumed were Sedulius’ own comments, begin with the line *Sed si quis quaerat quare…*. A similar question is posed in Jerome’s prologue to the Pauline corpus, a work from which Sedulius heavily excerpts (lines 89-128 of Sedulius’ Prologue are nearly verbatim from Jerome’s prologue to the Pauline letters, lines 27-53); however, Sedulius asks why ten letters to eight churches, whereas Jerome is strictly concerned with why ten letters. Sedulius’ rationale for providing an allegorical interpretation of numbers, *ut doctrinam Novi Testamenti a decalogo legis non discrepare ostenderet* (“so that he might show that the doctrine of the New Testament does not differ from the Decalogue of the law) mirrors Jerome’s, *Ut ostenderet Novum non discrepare a Veteri Testamento*… (“So that he might show that the New Testament does not contradict the Old Testament…”). They are both seeking to harmonize the Old and New Testaments. Patristic sources, and particularly Jerome, often employed an allegorical interpretation of numbers, a practice the Irish often copied. Bischoff names the allegorical interpretation of numbers as one of the most common traits of Irish exegesis, a trait inherited by Jerome.\(^\text{264}\) This example reveals Sedulius using Jerome not just for his linguistic and historical expertise, but as a model for hermeneutical practices.

Therefore in the Prologue, Sedulius used Jerome as an authority on issues of language and history, as an authoritative reader or reviewer of the Pauline epistles, and a model for

\(^{264}\) Bischoff, 1991, 86.
harmonizing the two testaments. Sedulius never disagreed with Jerome or offered counter points to any of Jerome’s claims. Also, Sedulius was not subtle about using Jerome, as every instance except two includes a citation of either name or work or both. It is evident that Jerome was a revered and celebrated scholar of the Bible at the time of Sedulius, as Jerome’s influence dominates Sedulius’ Prologue, a largely historical and linguistic introduction to the fourteen Pauline letters.

ii) Reception of Jerome in Galatians and Ephesians

Pelagius is the most used source in Sedulius’ Collectaneum; however, a study of Sedulius’ sources in Galatians and Ephesians requires a slight qualification.265 Jerome is actually used more in the commentaries of Galatians and Ephesians than Pelagius. According to calculations from the footnotes of Frede’s critical text, in Galatians there are 106 instances totaling 248 lines entailing Pelagius’ comments and fifty-three instances totaling 149 lines which entail Jerome’s comments. However, in Ephesians Jerome’s contributions in the commentary are much more than Pelagius’. This proves to be quite important as Sedulius prefaces the commentary on Ephesians with the following assertion (550, lines 1-3, Frede), Refert Scriptura testant Hieronimo, quod Paulus Ephesi triennio praedicaverit. Haec autem inter omnes Pauli epistolae vel maxime et verbis et sensu involuta est. In Ephesians then, the “greatest” of all the letters of Paul, Pelagius’ contribution equals 111 instances totaling 260 lines while Jerome’s contribution equals 151 instances totaling 458 lines. For the commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians combined, Jerome’s contribution equals 204 instances totaling 607 lines of

265 Sedulius may have relied more heavily on Pelagius in the other Pauline epistles because Pelagius is one of the few patristic commentators to have written a commentary for all of the Pauline letters. Augustine’s only full commentary of a Pauline epistle is on Galatians, and as mentioned above, Jerome only wrote commentaries for four of the Pauline epistles.
contribution, while Pelagius’ contribution equals 217 instances totaling only 508 lines. The number of separate instances is virtually the same; however, the overall contribution of lines favors Jerome by twenty percent.

As the numbers indicate, Sedulius’ reception of Jerome is widespread throughout Galatians and Ephesians. Jerome is most known for his work as a translator and expositor of Scripture, his advocacy of ascetic living, and battles with both friends and “heretics”, all of which are topics and characteristics reflected by Sedulius’ reception of Jerome in Galatians and Ephesians.

Jerome’s work as a translator is perhaps his most enduring contribution. Five times in Galatians and Ephesians, Sedulius refers to a translation matter in the Latin codices, Gal 2:5, 5:8, 5:9, 5:19, and Eph 1:10, and each instance locates its source in Jerome. In letter 57 to Pammachius (CSEL 88, 57.5.4-6), Jerome explains his style of translation:

> et dum alienam imperitiam volunt coarguere, suam produnt. Ego enim non solum fateor, sed libera voce profiteor, me in interpretatione Graecorum, absque Scripturis sanctis, ubi et verborum ordo mysterium est, non verbum e verbo, sed sensum exprimere de sensu.  

> And while they intend to assail the ignorance of another, they publish their own. Indeed, I do not only confess, but publicly declare with a free voice that – in my interpretation of Greek writers, except for the Holy Scriptures, where even the order of words is a mystery – I translate not word for word, but meaning for meaning.

Jerome applies this translation principle to the interpretation of biblical words. Jerome wrote in his commentary on Ephesians 2:21 (PL 26, 0477C), *Et si imperitus sermone, non tamen scientia* (*I Cor. XI, 6*), *sensus magis in eo quaeramus ordinem, quam verborum* (“And if one is ignorant in speech, not nevertheless in knowledge, let us seek in him more so the order of the meanings rather than just the words.”). Sedulius slightly adapted this line yet retained its meaning, while revealing a broader understanding of Jerome: (572, VIII.22-23, Frede), *Sensus magis in apostolo quaerendus est ordo quam verborum.* (“In the Apostle, one must more search for the
order of the meanings than of the words.”). This notion, as expressed by Sedulius receiving Jerome, corresponds to Jerome’s expressed approach to translation.

Therefore according to Jerome, providing a good translation of anything but Scripture implies a certain element of interpretation. Likewise, a good translation of Scripture is one that retains the order of words of the original language, which ultimately preserves the role of interpretation of the sacred texts for its readers. Hence, Jerome’s advice on how to read Scripture (as seen in the commentary of Eph 2:21) is equivalent to how he claims to translate texts (which are not Scripture). Embedded in Jerome’s two different approaches to translation is his high view of Scripture, which Sedulius preserves.

A high view of Scripture is likewise espoused in Sedulius’ commentary on Gal 3:8, which again derives from Jerome. These verses also implicitly highlight the importance of a Bible expositor. Jerome wrote in his commentary (CC, 77A, 76, 1-7),

PROVIDENS AUTEM SCRIPTURA QUIA EX FIDE IUSTIFICAT GENTES DEUS PRAENUNTIavit aBrahae Quia “BENEDICENTUR IN TE OMNES GENTES.” IGITUR QUI EX FIDE SUNT BENEDICENTUR CUM FIDELI ABRAHAM. Non quo ipsa Scriptura, atramentum videlicet et membranae (quae insensibiles sunt) possint futura praenoscere, sed quo Spiritus Sanctus et sensus qui in litteris latet multis post saeculis ventura prædixerint.

SCRIPTURE, HOWEVER, FORESEEING THAT GOD JUSTIFIES THE GENTILES BY FAITH PREACHED TO ABRAHAM THAT “ALL THE NATIONS WILL BE BLESSED IN YOU.” THEREFORE THE ONES WHO ARE BY FAITH WILL BE BLESSED WITH THE FAITHFUL ABRAHAM. Not that Scripture itself, that is black ink and parchment (which are senseless) are able to foreknow the future, but that the Holy Spirit and the sense which hides in the letters, have foretold what was about to come many centuries later.

Sedulius then takes this passage from Jerome and simplifies it to reduce the amount of lines yet retain its meaning, Gal 3:8 (525, IIII. 97-100, Frede):

PROVIDENS AUTEM SCRIPTURA. Non quo atramentum et membrana, quae insensus sunt, possunt futura praenoscere, sed quo Spiritus sanctus et sensus, qui in littera latet, futura praedicit.
Denying the obvious literal interpretation of this verse allows Sedulius to indicate his understanding of Scripture and the implied importance of an interpreter who can unfold the “sense which hides in the letter.”

Jerome was an ardent defender of chastity and virginity. Sedulius too apparently valued chastity as evidenced in his poem 13 (verses 1-18), in which he describes sacred vestments, one of which is the girdle. Thus, when the matter of impurity arises in Paul’s letter to the Ephesians, it is no surprise that Sedulius neglects the work of his other known sources – Marius Victorinus (fl. 355), Ambrosiaster (fl. 366-384), Pelagius (ca. 354-420/440), and Cassiodorus (ca. 485-585) – all of whom wrote commentaries on Ephesians and pre-dated Sedulius, but do not contain an exegesis remotely similar to Jerome’s. In Eph 5:3, Sedulius copies Jerome’s peculiarly detailed description of impurity: ET OMNIS INMVNDITIA.

Titillatio carnis et fluxus seminis ex qualicumque attritu uentris (“AND ALL IMPURITY. A tickling of the flesh and a flow of seed from whatsoever kind of rubbing of the stomach area.”). The other expositors either describe impurity as a sin symptomatic of something else or extend its application to the realm of thoughts, but all abstain from describing immunditia (“impurity”) in such narrow physical terms. Even when Paul turns the topic to “empty words” in Eph 5:6, Sedulius again turns to Jerome by inserting twenty-five consecutive lines, which recall the extreme turpitude of sexual immorality through a graphic description:

Respondeat, quia stultiloquium et scurrilitas non eundem habeat reatum, quem fornicatio, immunditia et avaritia, numquid non et turpitudinem cum tribus superioribus debuit nominare? Ad quod dicendum hic turpitudinem significare absconditam cogitationem,

266 Cf. his epistula XXII ad Eustochium and Adversus Jovinianum.
267 CCCM 117 or Doyle, 115 for a translation.
268 Frede includes the expositions of 1-2 Corinthians, Galatians, Ephesians, Philemon, Colossians, 1-2 Thessalonians, 1-2 Timothy, Titust, Philemon under the sigla of CA; however, Frede in Kirchenschriftsteller (1995), or Gryson in Repertoire general (2007), vol 1, 375 notes that only the exposition on Romans is by Cassiodorus and the other expositions are by his pupils.
cum inflammatur sensus noster ad libidinem et carnis titillationibus anima ignita succenditur et nihilominus Dei timore in iudicio refrenatur.

Much of Jerome’s literary output was an attempt to thwart what he deemed as heretical doctrines. In Galatians 5:9 (“A little leaven leavens the whole lump of dough”), Sedulius shows the breadth of Jerome’s value not only as an expert in language but as one concerned with heresy and the proclamation of true doctrine. Sedulius whittles forty lines of Jerome’s exposition down to four. Not every point of Jerome’s is transferred, but the platitude warning teachers of spreading a false doctrine, as well as the fact that there is a problem in the Latin codices are all related. Sedulius starts his exposition of Gal 5:9 by quoting from Pelagius, but seamlessly transitions into Jerome’s work beginning with the words Parva scintilla moenia (541, VIII.19-23, Frede):


The above excerpt also demonstrates the inclusive mentality of Sedulius. Jerome and Pelagius were sparring partners in the realm of doctrine, and in a verse warning teachers of spreading perverse doctrine, Sedulius includes the exposition of Pelagius immediately next to Jerome’s, who wrote an entire work consisting of three books which attacked Pelagius and accused him of heresy.

Jerome was not, however, treated as always standing in the right in his expositions. Galatians 2:11-14 is a passage with a long history of controversial interpretations, as is illustrated by Jerome’s reaction to Marius Victorinus’ exegesis and Augustine’s subsequent reaction to
Jerome’s interpretation. The basic point of controversy between Jerome and Augustine was whether or not Paul’s rebuke of Peter was a pretense or real. As Plumer argues, Jerome was seemingly attempting to protect the reputation of Peter, the first bishop of Antioch and then of Rome and moreover was the rock on whom the Church is built (Matt. 16:18). Augustine understood Jerome’s interpretation as making Paul into a liar and ultimately saw this as a dangerous precedent which would destroy the authority of Scripture, in that it sacrificed the veracity of Scripture for the sake of preserving the character of a person, namely Peter.

Augustine proceeded to write to Jerome in what was the beginning of a long series of letters to discuss this matter along with other issues. In letter 28.3.3, Augustine wrote: *mihi enim videtur exitiosissime credi aliquod in libris sanctis esse mendacium…* (“it seems to me extremely dangerous to believe that anything in the holy Scriptures is a lie…”). Expositors subsequent to Jerome and Augustine often reflect the exegesis of one or the other. Thus the Collectaneum of Sedulius, who is a biblical scholar of high ecclesiastical, social, and political standing, serves as an interesting case study on a matter of grave dispute between two of the most important figures for Carolingian writers. As Gal 2:15 reveals, instead of choosing a side, Sedulius presents the core of each of their arguments. Sedulius in his own commentary sides with Augustine, but does not reproach Jerome for missing the point. Sedulius quotes Clm 6235 fol. 17r,b to summarize the history of the problem between the two interpreters, and then ultimately agrees with Augustine by writing in the commentary for Gal 2:15 (521, III.28-32, Frede), *Hierominus de hac questione dicit... Augustinus vero asserit...* (“Jerome says concerning

---

269 Cf. Plumer, 41-53 for an indepth account of various patristic interpretations of this passage with special emphasis on Jerome and Augustine’s disagreement.
270 Plumer, 45; Cf. Jerome, PL 26: 341C: *primum episcopum Antiochenae Ecclesiae Petrum fuisse accepimus, et Romam exinde translatum.*
272 Cf. Plumer, 48.
273 This codex is from the ninth century, containing Irish glosses from the eighth century; Cf. Frede, (above, note 5) 45*-46*. 

this question… but Augustine asserts…”). It is a lengthy passage and is contained in the translations which ensue, but the key to be noted here is that Jerome, as he himself teaches in his commentary on Galatians 5:9, is held accountable by Sedulius when the latter identifies a false or bad interpretation of this passage and corrects it by presenting – or rather revealing via Augustine – a more satisfactory one. Thus, as exemplified in Sedulius’ treatment of this passage, his commentaries are truly a “collection” of authoritative exegesis. This purpose does not preclude him from making dogmatic points elsewhere. Nonetheless, as is typical of this genre and very much unlike patristic or even modern commentaries, Sedulius’ work is not governed by a dogmatic or polemical agenda.

Overall, Jerome should be regarded as an esteemed and substantial contributor to Sedulius’ Prologue and his commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians. Jerome was very popular with Carolingian expositors, and Sedulius quite naturally also respected his work. Sedulius evidently valued Jerome both as a scholar and interpreter of the Bible and used his work extensively throughout the commentaries, but Jerome’s most dominant influence is seen in the Prologue, where he is by far the most frequently used source. Sedulius’ reception of Jerome is particularly significant when we consider how differently his use of Jerome is compared to his employment of Pelagius and Augustine. Jerome’s lengthy discussions on historical matters and issues of language are often simplified and curtailed, whereas Sedulius predominantly uses Pelagius for his simple phrasing and lucid brevity. As argued below, Sedulius’ usage of Jerome is also different from that of Augustine. While Jerome is used consistently throughout Galatians and Ephesians, since Jerome wrote commentaries on both of those letters, there is less exegetical work from Augustine in the Collectaneum; nonetheless, Sedulius does excerpt large portions from Augustine’s non-commentary works. Such a heavy reliance on Jerome’s linguistic and

---

274 Laistner, 239-245.
historical knowledge as well as Sedulius’ use of Augustine implies a similar sentiment in Sedulius as expressed by Charlemagne in an anecdote related by Notker (ca. 840-912), a near contemporary biographer of Charlemagne. In this anecdote, Charlemagne says to Alcuin, “[i]f only I could have twelve such churchmen as learned and as well taught in all human wisdom as were Jerome and Augustine!” Alcuin then replied, “[t]he Creator of heaven and earth Himself has very few scholars like these men, and yet you hope for twelve!”

This section specifically examined selections of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*, and, it is hoped, has demonstrated how Jerome served as a critical *fons* of information pertinent to the cultural context and aims of the Carolingian empire. Perhaps because the empire was so linguistically diverse and complex, Carolingian scholars were able to appreciate Jerome’s work as a translator to an even greater degree than their predecessors and even successors. This reasoning could also explain why Jerome’s exegesis, which largely dealt with linguistic and historical issues, was so popular in the eighth and ninth centuries, a fact clearly evident in Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*.

### 6.4 Reception of Augustine

Sedulius’ use of Augustine is very different from that of Jerome or Pelagius, who were used pervasively throughout Galatians and Ephesians. The total usages of Jerome in Galatians and Ephesians equal 204 instances for 607 lines, and Pelagius’ are similar at 217 instances for

---

275 Notker wrote *Gesta Karoli* around 884 through the help of one source, Adabert. See H. Fichtenau, 28, n.4.
276 *O utinam haberem duodecim clericos tales, ita doctos et omni sapientia tam perfecte instructos, ut fuerant Hieronimus et Augustinus!* ... *Creator coeli et terrae similes illis plures non habuit et tu vis habere duodecim!* Notker the Stammerer, *De Carolo Magno*, 1.9. “Monumenta Carolina”, *Bibliotheca Rerum Germanicarum* v. 4, ed. Philipp Jaffé, Berlin: 1867.
277 Kaczynski, 1995, 177.
278 See Kaczynski (above, n. #), 177-178, and for a broader discussion as to the popularity of Jerome’s exegesis in these centuries, see Laistner (above, n. #), 239-245.
As their instances are so numerous, a listing of each is not only too lengthy but also impractical. However, due to the nature of Sedulius’ employment of Augustine (there are fewer occurrences but more lines per instance), a list of the usages throughout the Prologue, Galatians, and Ephesians will be both useful and expedient for our purposes. I have placed the issue to which each usage pertains in parenthesis.

- Prologue, lines 200-229, *util. cred.* 5–8. (interpreting Scripture)
- Galatians 2:15, (III.32-36), ep. 40.3. (Jewish element)
- Galatians 4:1, (VII.2-5), *exp. Gal.* 29.3. (Jewish element)
- Galatians 4:4, (VII.16-17), *exp. Gal.* 30.4. (Jewish element)
- Galatians 4:5, (VII.21-22), *exp. Gal.* 30.7. (transmission of sin)
- Galatians 4:9, (VII.27-35), *Gn. litt.* 4.9. (predestination)
- Galatians 4:10, (VII.42-48), *ench.* 79. (astrology)
- Galatians 4:14, (VII.62-65), *exp. Gal.* 37.4-5. (persecution of Paul)
- Galatians 4:16-17, (VII.72-75), *exp. Gal.* 37.7. (Jewish element)
- Ephesians 1:10, (I.84-88), *ench.* 62 (PL 40, 82). (predestination)
- Ephesians 2:8, (V.1-2), *ench.* 31 (PL 40, 66), (predestination)
- Ephesians 4:13, (XV.29-59), *civ.* 22.15.5-24; 22.18.17-21; 22.18.31-38. (humanity/divinity of Christ)
- Ephesians 4:24, (XVII.71-72), *trin.* 14.22. (transmission of sin)
- Ephesians 4:30, (4.4-17), *Gn. litt.* 4.9. (trinity)
- Ephesians 6:12, (XXX.5-6), *en. Ps.* 54.4.27. (transmission of sin)

---

279 An “instance” is the listing by Frede in his *apparatus fontium*. Also, these statistics are used in the chapter on the reception of Jerome as well. They are not exact, as my method was to count a whole line if even just a part of the line was sourced from Jerome, and the same holds true for Pelagius. Thus, as does occur, some lines were counted for each author, e.g., the following is Gal 1:1 (512, I.2, Frede), “*non ab* humana praesumptione, ut illi dicunt. Hoc contra eos,”. From “*non*” to “dicunt” the source is Pelagius; however, the phrase “Hoc contra eos” comes from Jerome. Therefore, Gal 1:1 (I.2) counts as one line for each author.

280 In the following list, • denotes that the usage can be found in Frede’s *apparatus fontium*, but * means that Frede did not note the line(s) as coming from Augustine, but that I have.

281 In Gal 2:15 (521, III.28-38, Frede), Sedulius is excerpting from Clm 6235 (a manuscript from the ninth century, containing Irish glosses from the eighth century; Frede, 45* - 46*) and not from Augustine directly, as Frede maintains.
The two exceptional matters with regard to the list above are the length of lines per use and the array of non-commentary works from which Sedulius drew. The average length per instance for Jerome is almost exactly 3 lines, and for Pelagius it is about 2.3 lines per instance. But for Augustine, 12 out of the 18 instances are 4 lines or more.

Throughout the commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, Sedulius almost exclusively draws from commentaries. Augustine is one of the rare exceptions. In Galatians there are ten different authors from whom Sedulius draws. Only one work from each author is used, except for Augustine, where Sedulius draws from five different works. The same pattern occurs in Ephesians, where Augustine is one of three authors from whom Sedulius uses more than one work, with Isidore and Cassian each having two works referenced.

These disparities point to an important fact about the reception of Augustine. Even though there is relatively little work in commentary form from Augustine on the Pauline epistles, his biblical exegesis in the doctrinal and theological works remained important to Sedulius. The verses in which Sedulius uses Augustine contain issues important in the time of Sedulius, such as: free will and predestination, transmission of sin, the trinity, the divinity of Christ, and Jewish-Christian relations. All of the twenty-two instances listed above deal with one of these issues except for Gal 4:10 (“You observe days and months and seasons and years.”), where the Augustinian excerpt deals with astrology, also an important issue in both Augustine’s and Sedulius’ time, and Gal 4:14 (“and that which was a trial to you in my bodily condition you did not despise or loathe, but you received me as an angel of God, as Christ Jesus Himself.”), which

---

282 This calculation does not include Sedulius himself; calculated from the *apparatus fontium* in Frede’s critical edition.
283 Isidore of Seville (560–April 4, 636) served as Archbishop of Seville for over thirty years. His two works which Sedulius used were the *Etymologiae* and the *Sententiae*.
284 John Cassian (ca. 360–435) was a Latin theologian known for his mystical writings, whose two major theological works are both used by Sedulius, the *Institutiones* and the *Collationes*.
discusses the Galatians’ reaction to the persecution of Paul. From this verse, Sedulius only takes issue with *et temptationem vestram*.

For the two longest instances, which are also the only two explicitly cited in the text, the thirty line quotation of Augustine’s *util. cred.* found in the Prologue (lines 200-229) and the thirty-one line quotation of Augustine’s *civ.* found at Eph 4:13 (XV.29-59), I have summarized a detailed analysis below. But here, I will offer some evaluations for each of the above listed instances that are not elsewhere discussed in this study.\(^{286}\)

Ten of the twenty-two instances derive from Augustine’s *exp. Gal.*, and Sedulius’ pattern of reception for these selections is only slightly different than those deriving from other works. Augustine’s writing style in his commentary is occasionally less fluid than appears in his theological and polemical works, and therefore requires more editing by Sedulius to maintain a certain level of simplicity for his readers. The longest excerpt from Augustine’s *exp. Gal.* comes from Gal 3:13. Sedulius there draws from a total of two chapters 27.3-28.1 and only omits a parenthetical statement. In Plumer’s translation of *exp. Gal.*, he places the portion that Sedulius omits in parentheses. The other selections from Augustine’s *exp. Gal.* are shorter in length and are seemingly only edited for purposes of simplification. The quotations used in Gal 4:4 and 4:5, for example, are virtually verbatim; however, Sedulius simplifies Augustine’s writing in his selection for 4:1. There, Sedulius changes Augustine’s phrases, *id est ex ea parte, qua de Iudaeis congregatus est*, and *ex ea parte, qua de gentibus congregatus est* to *ex parte Iudaorum*, and *ex parte gentium*, respectively.

The instances that derive from works other than Augustine’s *exp. Gal.* receive minimal editing, especially in comparison to the passages received from Jerome and Pelagius. The

\(^{286}\) Thus, all twenty-two instances of Sedulius’ reception of Augustine are treated within this thesis; for instances not treated immediately below, see the sections in this study on the “Augustine and Pelagius dynamic” and “ecclesiastical and theological issues”.
selections presented are quoted nearly verbatim, though Sedulius often skips chapters or makes large omissions from Augustine’s text. For example, in Gal 3:13, Sedulius selects three passages from *c. Faust.*, but he presents them as one continuous passage. Sedulius omitted Augustine’s polemical rhetoric and direct references to Faustus, but otherwise draws consecutively from 14.4-6. Similarly, his quotation of *Gn. Litt.* 4.9, which is found in Sedulius’ commentary for Eph 4:30, receives few emendations. Sedulius there draws from consecutive lines in Augustine’s work and only modifies the opening few words, which better situates the reader.

Sedulius does not often receive Augustine in his commentary on Ephesians, which may be attributed to the fact that Augustine did not write a commentary for that epistle. However, even in Sedulius’ commentary for Galatians, a letter for which Augustine did produce a commentary, Augustine is still received demonstrably fewer times than either Jerome or Pelagius. In order to explain this discrepancy, it is beneficial to compare Augustine’s content and composition within *exp. Gal.* with that of the commentaries by Jerome and Pelagius, which are used throughout. Pelagius’ style and form are very similar to Sedulius’ and the general style of biblical commentaries at Sedulius’ time. Pelagius, typically, writes brief, lucid explanations, thus Sedulius adapts much of Pelagius’ writing verbatim, especially since most of it is orthodox exegesis. Jerome, who is also used pervasively, is more verbose; however, Sedulius, like many of the Carolingian and Irish exegetes before and after him, tends to prefer exegetical comments regarding linguistic and historical issues, which are copious throughout Jerome’s commentaries. It is only in the matters of great social and ecclesiastical import that we find the work of Augustine sourced by Sedulius, as discussed above. Partly because Augustine’s comments in *exp. Gal.* are more verbose and in total lengthier than Pelagius’ commentary and therefore less conducive to Sedulius’ own style, and partly due to the lack of linguistic and historical elements,
Sedulius does not draw from Augustine’s exp. Gal. quite as often as he does from Jerome’s or Pelagius’ commentaries on that epistle. The disparity in the number of instances and average length per instance may further be explained by noting the type of works from which Sedulius was drawing. The non-commentary works of Augustine do not lend themselves to shorter, exegetical explanations like the commentaries of Pelagius or Jerome, but rather, contain a certain verbosity common in theological and polemical treatises.

Scholars often list Augustine among the numerous authors commonly used by Carolingian biblical exegetes, but they do not mention the diversity of work represented, i.e., whether the works used are commentaries or theological treatises, or both. It is not surprising to find that Sedulius used Augustine given Augustine’s acknowledged status, by Carolingians, as one of the preeminent contributors to their thought. However, an analysis of the pattern of collection and reception of the various authors used throughout Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians reveals his reception of Augustine as exceptional.

Not only was Sedulius’ selection of Augustinian materials exceptional, as much of it derived from works other than commentaries, but his use of it also reveals a heightened level of respect for Augustine’s writings. A survey of each instance reveals that Sedulius rarely adds to or changes any words from Augustine’s writing, and the few edits that do take place are often the omissions of a parenthetical statement or digression by Augustine. There is the occasional exception, such as Sedulius’ use of the term saeculum, but the pattern of editorial deference remains throughout. Beyond the excerpted use of Augustine’s materials, Sedulius’ work betrays a deep, structural appreciation of Augustine’s pattern of thinking. An examination of a

---

287 See Contreni, 1992, 85, 88; McKitterick, 1983, 150.
288 Sullivan’s comment is typical (60), “Modern scholars all know well enough who, in the eyes of the Carolingians, represented that tradition: God’s writ enshrined in Scripture; a select group of pagan Latin authors; a circle of late antique religious Fathers, including especially Ambrose, Jerome, Augustine, Boethius, Cassiodorus, Benedict of Nursia, Gregory the Great, and Isidore of Seville…..”
methodological maneuver received from Augustine will not only demonstrate Sedulius’ skill as an editor but his broad comprehension of Augustinian thought.

i) The Model for a Methodological Maneuver

Sedulius’ reception of Augustine is not limited to the above list of instances. Victorinus’ statement that all writers of academic disciplines have dealt with and embedded the seven circumstances into the precepts of their own work suggests that the employment of the seven circumstances in different disciplines was common. The methodological link, or precedent, for Sedulius’ adaptation of the seven types of circumstance, which was previously employed by Servius and rhetoricians in a secular context but here re-applied in a scriptural context, was likely facilitated through Augustine. In book 4 of *doctr. chr.*, Augustine warns his readers not to expect an outlaying of the rules of rhetoric and to seek them from him neither in this work nor in any other by him (4.1.2). Nonetheless, Augustine implicitly advocates the usage of the circumstances in *util. cred.* and employs them in his analysis of the opening verses of Genesis in the *conf.*

In a biblical context, Sedulius uses the seven types of circumstance as a template for situating the Pauline letters into their historical context and for establishing Paul as an authoritative teacher who is to be trusted. In that role, they align with the teachings of Augustine who advocates a hermeneutic of trust, at least in his work *util. cred.* Augustine’s work *util. cred.* had an undeniable influence on Sedulius’ Prologue as the ending is an extended, cited quotation from that work. Specifically, in *util. cred.* Augustine develops an argument for seeking out scholars and teachers who are sympathetic to the work(s) on which they lecture. The example

---

289 See also Burton, 141-164 on Augustine’s partial avoidance of pagan terminology after his conversion.
291 Augustinus, *conf.*, 11.9.11.
Augustine uses is the grammarians who lecture on Virgil and expound upon the many questions regarding his life. The reference to the study of the life of Virgil is likely recalling the work of Donatus and Servius, whose commentaries would have been used by grammarians and teachers of that text. In chapter 13 he criticizes those teachers who wage war against the authors of a work. He calls them “foolish” and then names two circumstances: “why” and “what type.”

But do not those teachers seem to you the kind, who, in those matters which they do not understand, either why, or all-together what type, although similar to lowly things, nevertheless they are to the intelligent refined and divine, maligning them with a great force of speech and curses, think that they are accomplishing something, because the ignorant applaud them?

After naming those two circumstances, Augustine discusses the quis, or in this instance the author. Concerning the author, Augustine argues that one ought not to seek a teacher who offers only praise for the author but shows, through those innumerable questions (de illis eius quaestionibus innumerabilibus) about which the grammatici are concerned, how the author erred and doted (qui per eas illum errasse ac delirasse conaretur ostendere).

Thus, if Sedulius followed Augustine’s advice, he would use those questions to raise even negative points about Paul, which he does. In the investigation of the first circumstance (lines 21-67), Sedulius reports how Paul (there called Saul) erred in his younger life as a persecutor of Christians. Furthermore, he applies a mystical interpretation combining the Hebrew text with information from the New Testament to claim that Paul is in fact a “son of sorrow”.

Further influence from Augustine’s util. cred. may be revealed in the opening lines of the Prologue. Sedulius claims that before the Scriptures can be expounded, there is prior work to be done.

---

292 Augustine, util. cred., 6.13.3-6 (CSEL 25): Sed nonne tibi tales videntur isti, qui ea quae non intellegunt, aut cur, aut omnino qualia sunt, quamve iacentibus similia, subtilia tamen intellegentibus atque divina, magno impetu orationis maledictisque lacerantes, quia eis imperiti plaudunt, aliquid se proficere existimant?

293 Augustine, util. cred., 13. The term delirasse, used here in the context of Virgil’s life, may be an allusion to Donatus’ Vita, where he writes that Virgil preferred boys, libidinis in pueros prornioris (“with regard to pleasure, he preferred boys”). If the latter is an allusion, this furthers the argument that Augustine also understands Donatus’ Vita as an employment of the seven circumstances.

294 Prologue 60-67 (3-4, Frede).
done, i.e., one must draw out the seven types of circumstance. This statement mirrors the line of argument found in chapter 13 of *util. cred.* Augustine writes, “[f]irst it must be done with you, so that you do not hate those authors, next so that you may love them. This must be done in some other way rather than by expounding their sentences and letters.” The “some other way” is qualified in the lines that follow, where Augustine describes the questions that must first be answered about the author as the “innumerable ones” about which the *grammataci* are so often concerned. “Innumerable ones” is the same description given to the questions about the authors in both Augustine’s work on rhetoric (*infinita in qualitatibus personarum perspectio*) and in Sedulius’ Prologue (*quae nunc per singula enumerare perlongum est*). And as I demonstrated above, Augustine is not concerned only with that which surrounds the author, or *quis*, but those other things that the dissenting teachers know nothing about, such as matters pertaining to “why” it was written and “what type or kind” it is, etc.

Augustine’s implicit argument within *util. cred.* for the use of the seven circumstances with specific reference to the life of Virgil as the secular example was not likely lost on Sedulius, who was intimately familiar with Servius and *util. cred.* There is, however, another highly suggestive connection between Servius/Donatus, Sedulius, and Augustine. In Sedulius’ work, *Tractatus in Donati Artem Minorem*, he provides a rhetorical explanation of the seven circumstances. He mentions Donatus as the *operatrix*, but when defining *tempus*, the fifth circumstance, he writes: *Augustinus: tempus est aut memoria praeterorum aut praesentis morula aut quidam intuitus et expectatio futurorum*. This definition is taken from *conf.* book 11,

---


296 Augustine, *De Rhetorica*, 8 (48, 10-11, Giomini).

297 Prologue 18 (2, Frede).
which is the larger context of Augustine’s employment of the seven circumstances. Sedulius’ knowledge of Augustine’s use of the circumstances is clear.

Before Augustine interprets the opening verses of Genesis in Book XII of the _conf_. he first investigates the seven types of circumstance in Book IX. Augustine begins Book IX by petitioning God for help on how to understand Scripture, and specifically, how he created the world as reported by Moses in Genesis. The petition lasts for three chapters and then beginning with chapter 4, Augustine systematically runs through the seven types of circumstance, though he gives them neither an introduction nor label. The “thing” or “deed” in this instance is the creation of the world and the “who” is God. This much is declared in the line _tu ergo, domine, fecisti ea [caelum et terra]._ He then goes on to describe various qualities of both Creator and creation.

The next two species of circumstance that he discusses are the “where” and “material” or means by which God created the world: _neque in universo mundo fecisti universum mundum, quia non erat, ubi fieret, antequam fieret, ut esset. …ergo dixisti et facta sunt, atque in verbo tuo fecisti ea._ The fifth species of circumstance that Augustine investigates is _quomodo_, how or in what manner it was done. The following lines distinguish the means from the mode for Augustine, _Sed quomodo dixisti? Numquid illo modo, quo facta est vox de nube dicens: Hic est filius meus dilectus?_ Hence the means by which the world was created was through the voice of God, but the mode was through the wisdom and intelligence of God as is explained in the rest

---

299 Augustinus, _conf._, 11.4.6.
300 Augustinus, _conf._, 11.5.7: “You did not make the whole world in the whole world, because it was not there, where it was made, before it was made, so that it would be. … Therefore you spoke and they were made, and in your word you made them.”
301 Augustinus, _conf._, 11.6.8: “But how did you say it? For was it in the same way, by which the voice from the cloud was made, saying: This is my beloved son [Matt. 3:17]?”
of the chapter. This is likely Sedulius’ model for explaining the difference between the materia and modus and suggests why he uses the adjectives “wise or foolish” as examples of attributes for the “why” species, when no other writers include such remarks in their treatment of the seven types of circumstance.  

Chapter seven is a continuation of describing the attributes of God’s voice and a transition into the sixth species of circumstance, “why”, as reflected in the opening line of chapter eight: Cur, quaeso, domine deus meus? He answers this question with the sentence, sic in evangelio percarnem ait, et hoc insonuit foris auribus hominum, ut crederetur et intus quaereretur, et inveniretur in aeterna veritate, ubi omnes discipulos bonus et solus magister docet.  

The answer to the “why” circumstance serves as a transition into chapter nine and his treatment of the last circumstance, the “when”. This circumstance and all the other quick answers to the aforementioned species of circumstance are recapitulated in the beginning of chapter nine. Augustine writes, [i]n hoc principio fecisti, deus, caelum et terram, in verbo tuo in filio tuo, in virtute tua, in sapientia tua, in veritate tua, miro modo dicens et miro modo faciens.

Thus, in that line are the answers he gave to all seven types of circumstance: [i]n hoc principio is the “when”, fecisti, deus is the “who”, caelum et terram is the “what”, in verbo tuo in filio tuo is the “material”, in virtute tua in sapientia tua is the “manner”, and in veritate tua is the “why”. The “where” is denoted by his usage of the preposition in for all of those species of circumstance, because God is in all of those things, and only God existed before the creation of

302 See particularly pp. # above for my comments concerning lines 9-11 of Sedulius’ Prologue.
303 Augustinus, conf., 11.8.1: “Why, I ask, O Lord my God?”
304 Augustinus, conf., 11.8.5-6: “Thus in the Gospel he speaks through the flesh, and this sounds in the ears of men, so that it is believed and inwardly questioned, and it is discovered in eternal truth, where the good and only teacher instructs all the disciples.”
305 Augustinus, conf., 11.9.1-2: “In this beginning, O God, you have made heaven and earth, in your word, in your son, in your power, in your wisdom, in your truth; marvelously speaking and marvelously making.”
306 Note that Augustine equates the word used to create the world with the “Word which became flesh”, i.e., Jesus.
the world. Therefore the only “place” one could consider the creation as occurring is in Him. The order of treating the species of circumstance seemed to be dictated by the logic of Augustine’s arguments and not by some preset template; however, the order in which he summarized them was the same order in which he treated them. This is a practice which Cicero teaches and Sedulius likewise employs.  

After Augustine summarizes the seven types of circumstance in 11.9, he returns to some of the more abstract answers, namely those concerning time and eternity and discusses them at length until the close of book eleven. In book twelve he expositis Genesis 1:1-2. Thus, as Augustine teaches in util. cred. and as occurs in Sedulius’ Prologue, the seven types of circumstance presented in conf. 11.4.6-11.9.11 introduce Augustine’s biblical exegesis of Genesis 1:1-2, which begins in conf. 12.1.1. These connections between Sedulius, Augustine, and Servius and Donatus suggest that Sedulius understood his own presentation of the seven circumstances within his Prologue as a continuation of Augustine’s ecclesiastical deployment of this historically and secularly employed trope. Hence, Servius is Sedulius’ literary model as demonstrated above, but Augustine facilitated Sedulius’ methodological maneuver.

ii) Quotation of De Utilitate Credendi in Sedulius’ Prologue

The purpose of this section is to examine how Sedulius uses, adapts, and edits his long quotation of Augustine within the Prologue. The quotation extends from line 200 through the

---

307 Concerning the presentation of the species of circumstance, Cicero stated that it was necessary to discuss them in the same order that they were introduced and uses this phrase at the end of that discussion (De Inventione 1.23.33), ita ut ordo ipse postulat (“thus as the order itself demands”). Sedulius, it must be noted, does indeed present the circumstances in the order in which he introduces them and even writes this as a transition into the sixth circumstance (Prologue, 174, 8, Frede), nunc ordo postulat ut (“now the order demands that”).

308 See pp. #-. 

141
The context of Augustine’s writing is his attempt to introduce a methodology for interpreting the Old Testament contra the Manichees. Augustine mentions in his Retractiones (i.14) that he wrote De Utilitate Credendi (util. cred.) for a friend who had been deceived by the Manichees, and thus it serves largely as a polemic against that group and simultaneously as an exhortation to his friend Honoratus first to believe in order to understand the Old Testament Scriptures and then, more broadly, to believe the Catholic faith.

The context of Sedulius’ quotation of Augustine is Sedulius’ Prologue to the commentaries of the corpus of Pauline letters. Whereas Augustine’s argument for a proper fourfold hermeneutic as a way of interpreting the Bible is limited to the Old Testament, Sedulius uses Augustine’s methodology as a general system for interpreting both Testaments – not just the Old.

Sedulius’ Prologue consists of two parts; the first dealing with the seven types of circumstance, the other introducing the fourfold hermeneutic from Augustine’s util. cred. The long quotation is inserted after the seven circumstances are “considered” and is somewhat abruptly situated as both a lead-in to the corpus of commentaries and as a conclusion to the Prologue.

Sedulius’ editing and application of Augustine’s work seems to serve three purposes: 1) he recognizes Augustine as an authority, 2) he universalizes Augustine’s statements so that they might be applicable for his purposes, and 3) there are a) miscellaneous editorial curtailings which are assumed to be for length and b) specific adaptations for audience, as the given changes seem to reflect no other greater purpose.
There are technical and superficial edits and omissions of Augustine’s text in Sedulius’ quotation. Some changes of course represent only minor textual matters that indicate no substantive difference between the texts of Sedulius and Augustine, but others, which I will indicate below, are of a greater significance. The first sentence of the quotation is the most changed and also reveals Sedulius’ attempts to universalize Augustine’s statements for his own purposes.

From Augustine’s *util. cred.* 3.5 (CSEL 25, 7, 26-27):

> Omnis igitur Scriptura, quae Testamentum Vetus vocatur, diligenter eam nosse cupientibus quadrifariam traditur: secundum historiam, secundum aetiologiam, secundum analogiam, secundum allegoriam.

From Sedulius’ Prologue (9, 201-202, Frede):

> Omnis divina scriptura quadriaria est hoc est historia aethimologia analogia allegoria.

Sedulius adds the descriptor *divina* to *Scriptura*. Here the term is a supplement to this particular sentence that serves to broaden Augustine’s interpretative method to include the New Testament, but Augustine himself did describe *Scriptura* as “divine” four other times throughout the treatise.309 By transposing it here, Sedulius also incorporates an Augustinian conviction about Scripture which helps to spiritualize his own writing. Sedulius also omits the explanatory clause, “which is called the Old Testament”, as another means of broadening Augustine’s interpretative method.

Another significant omission in this sentence is the phrase *diligenter eam nosse cupientibus quadrifariam traditur*. The only word Sedulius retains from that phrase is *quadrifaria*; however, that phrase echoes a major theme of the treatise. Throughout *util. cred.*,310

---

309 Three occurrences in 3.7 alone (CSEL 25): 1) *Scripturis divinis*, 2) *Scripturas divinas*, 3) *divinorum Librorum* (the “divine books” in this context is Scripture).

310 Cf. chapters 10.24-15.33, 17.35, but note especially 6.13 (CSEL 25, 7, 15-20): *Sed nihil est profecto temeritatis plenius quae nobis tunc pueris inerat, quam quorumque librorum expositores deserere, qui eos se tenere ac*
Augustine argues that one (*Honoratus* by name) ought to seek teachers of the Old Testament who *believe* its writings, as opposed to those who dismiss them or do not accept their teaching, such as the Manichees. Also key in this notion is the verb *traditur*, which expresses a strong sense of tradition, as we know the word, in a successive line of sympathetic teachers as outlined in Augustine’s examples in chapter 13. Though this omission does not necessarily reveal much of Sedulius’ own purposes, it does indicate that he is not here concerned with retaining Augustine’s context, which is that Scriptures are best learned from scholars who reverence their antiquity and divine origin. This omission reflects again his attempts to universalize Augustine’s interpretative method. The only other difference between the two opening sentences is how Sedulius spells the word *aetiology*: Augustine spells it as *aetiologia* throughout, while Sedulius spells it *aethimologia* throughout.\(^{311}\)

Sedulius then omits Augustine’s next four sentences. Those sentences are a plea to Honoratus not to think Augustine inappropriate for using Greek transliterated words.\(^{312}\) By omitting these lines, Sedulius is perhaps preserving Augustine’s authoritative status and/or this is not relevant for Sedulius. Whereas Augustine felt that some type of explanation was necessary for his employment of Greek terms, Sedulius (assuming the adaptation was for a reason other than mere considerations of length) either lacked Augustine’s sensitivities in such matters, or was working in a social setting that would not have thought the usage of Greek pretentious. For

\(^{311}\) In A. Hoffmann, *Augustinus De Utilitate Credendi: übersetzt und eingeleitet* (Freiburg: Herder, 1992), 90, the word is spelled “aetioligiam”; however, in his *apparatus criticus* Hoffmann notes variant spellings including “aethimologiam” as appears in Sedulius. Frede, *Sedulii Scotti Collectaneum in Apostolum*, 9, also notes variant spellings for *aethimologia* including *aetioligia*.

\(^{312}\) *Util. cred.* 3.5 (CSEL 25, 8, 1): *ne me ineptum putes graecis nominibus utentem*. As A. Hoffmann, *Augustinus De Utilitate Credendi: übersetzt und eingeleitet*, 90, n. 17, has noted, Augustine may be bearing in mind the Ciceronian tradition of employing exclusively Latin vocabulary (*latinitas*). The fact that Sedulius omitted this comment from his quotation may be a point of reception of Augustine inasmuch as Augustine advocates throughout *De Doctrina Christiana* the learning and using of the original biblical languages for the purpose of interpreting Scripture.
example, earlier in the Prologue, Sedulius uses the word *peristasis*, a transliteration of the Greek term meaning “circumstance”. Furthermore, Sedulius criticizes Paul for his lack of knowledge in Greek when he writes in his commentary on Gal 6:1 (546, VIII.114-116, Frede), “a Jew, most learned in his own language, could not express the profound meanings in a foreign language, nor was he well disposed concerning words, although he had a general understanding.”

The next eleven lines of Augustine are quoted verbatim by Sedulius (9-10, 203-224, Frede), except for a few minor differences. Sedulius then omits the final sentence of chapter 6 of *util. cred.*, which claims that it would take too long to explain the matter further. Sedulius then omits the entire seventh chapter except for the opening sentence which states, *porro analogiam, qua utriusque Testamenti congruentia perspicitur* (“next is analogy, through which the agreement of both testaments is seen”). The rest of Augustine’s chapter 7 is a combination of biographical information and a diatribe against the Manichees and thus unimportant for the purposes of Sedulius. Much of the Augustinian biographical comments are remarks of humility, which are necessary to Augustine’s purpose, but irrelevant to Sedulius, whose omissions of that material signify a subtle attempt at preserving Augustine’s authority as a great teacher.

The Prologue then ends (10, 224-229, Frede) with a quotation from chapter 8, where Augustine introduces the fourth way in which Scripture is “handed down”. Sedulius quotes the beginning of Augustine’s remarks on “allegory” and includes Augustine’s first example, which is a quotation of Jesus from the Gospel of Matthew 12:39-40. In this textual example, Jonah is the allegorical referent of Jesus, the Son of Man, who must like Jonah be swallowed up for “three days and three nights” in the “belly” / “heart of the earth”. Though Augustine continues his discourse on allegory at the end of the citation of Matthew 12:39-40 and includes more

---

313 None of the differences reflected in Sedulius are supported by the extant manuscripts of Augustine’s *util. cred.* (CSEL 25).
examples from Pauline letters (1 Corinthians 9:1ff and Galatians 4:22ff), Sedulius does not. Since this is a prologue to commentaries on the Pauline corpus, it is surprising that Sedulius does not incorporate Augustine’s other examples of allegory into this quotation. Not only does he omit them from this quotation in the Prologue, but he does not even use the materials later in their respective places in the commentaries on Corinthians and Galatians. For example, Augustine refers to Galatians 4:22 as an example of allegory and comments on it; however, in Sedulius’ commentary on Galatians, he does not refer to Augustine’s comments from *util. cred.* This is significant because Sedulius uses Augustine as the authority on the fourfold interpretative method for Scripture and thus is aware of the text in which Augustine provides examples from Pauline literature; however, he chooses not to rely on those examples.

The ending of the Prologue seems abrupt to a modern reader; however, there are perhaps reasons why it may serve as a suitable ending for Sedulius: first, it ends with a dominical saying of Jesus, thus proving an early authority and example for harmonizing the two testaments. This Christological statement summarizes the Gospel as it occurs in Romans 6:2-4, Colossians 2:12, and 1 Corinthians 15:1-4, which are formulaic summaries of the larger Gospel narrative as they refer to the death and resurrection of Jesus. Sedulius, therefore, positions the Gospels as a scriptural preface to the Pauline epistles: Jonah “prefigures” the Gospel narrative and so Jesus’ quotation of Jonah (Matthew 12:39-40) is a fitting place to end as Jesus’ method foreshadows Sedulius’ own purposes for expounding the Pauline epistles. The heavy spiritualization and pastoral themes throughout the ensuing commentaries indicate that such an ending may be understood as a metaphorical transition into Sedulius’ commentaries on the Pauline corpus.

---

314 As De Lubac notes in his seminal work, *Medieval Exegesis*, vol. 1, 247-248, harmonizing the two Testaments lies at the center of patristic exegesis and serves as the control for their whole doctrine of the “four figures”; therefore, as the Carolingians sought to borrow from or at worst emulate patristic writers, it is not surprising to locate in Sedulius an example like this one at the end of his Prologue.
Second, the abrupt ending with no closing remarks beyond what was quoted from Augustine is also fitting in an ironical way. That is, throughout *util. cred.*, Augustine argued that one ought to submit not only to a teacher who believes, but one who is an authority in that discipline and is renowned for his or her erudite qualities. Thus, by not adding any closing remarks of his (Sedulius’) own, he is giving Augustine the last word and effectively making Augustine the chief instructor.  

Overall, Sedulius abbreviates, changes, and omits from Augustine’s work to form a concise, but accurate rendering of Augustine’s work. The changes were seemingly made to allow for Sedulius’ broader interpretation and preserve Augustine as an authority. In a time before footnotes and modern ideas of citation, it is remarkable how closely and accurately Sedulius quoted Augustine. Also remarkable in Sedulius’ reception of Augustine is the manner and purpose for which Augustine’s material was employed. Sedulius effectively adhered to the larger hermeneutical principle of Augustine’s work, *util. cred.*, by allowing Augustine, the authoritative teacher, to provide the final teaching, which ultimately served as a fitting introduction to the Pauline corpus. Just as Augustine deferred to Jesus as an example of allegorical teaching, Sedulius deferred to Augustine. Thus Augustine surfaces not merely as a source of information for Sedulius, but also as an authority worth imitating.

---

315 Earlier in this section, the importance of the notion of *traditur*, or knowledge being handed down, was noted as significant for Augustine, and that Sedulius omitted the phrase; but, I would like to note here that there is a difference between Sedulius not retaining the context of an important Augustinian theme, but nevertheless employing its overall hermeneutical thrust, as I argue above.
iii) Quotation of De Civitate Dei in Sedulius’ Commentary on Ephesians

*Civ.* may well be the most copied work of early Latin Christian texts.\(^{316}\) Einhard, Charlemagne’s contemporary biographer, states that *civ.* was a favorite of Charlemagne.\(^{317}\) Its prominent influence in the Carolingian culture of Christian revival and learning is widely if not completely acknowledged. Therefore, it is not surprising to find that of all the cited (where Sedulius named the source within the text) quotations of works throughout Sedulius’ commentaries the longest explicit excerpt comes from *civ.* The only other excerpt of nearly equal length is also Augustine’s, though from *util. cred.*, which was discussed above. This section explores Sedulius’ reception of the two passages of *civ.* which he explicitly quoted for his commentary on Eph 4:13 (“until we all attain to the unity of the faith, and of the knowledge of the Son of God, to a mature man, to the measure of the stature which belongs to the fullness of Christ”).

Sedulius introduces the quotation by simply saying, *Ex libro De civitate Dei XXII* (580, XV.28-29, Frede). The form of this explicit citation mirrors the manner in which he cited Jerome’s commentary on Habakkuk in Eph 2:15.\(^{318}\) The citation in Eph 4:13 and the one which occurs in Eph 2:15 are the only two times in either the Galatians or Ephesians commentaries that Sedulius explicitly names the text from which he is quoting; furthermore, the fame of the book, *civ.*, does not necessitate that he name the author, Augustine. Sedulius then quotes the entire chapter almost verbatim, except for the first sentence (which Sedulius omits), and consequently the *autem* from the second sentence, as well as a few other minor variances. Excluding the

\(^{316}\) Cf. O’Daly, 275.
\(^{318}\) *Idem in expositione Abbacuc* (570, VII.22-23, Frede).
autem in the second sentence reveals an intentional omission of the first sentence as the autem signifies a contrary opinion to the previous statement.

Most of the differences are minor textual matters such as variant spellings (etiam si for etiamsi), or the transposition of words, such as proprio spatio instead of spatio proprio; however, there are two differences which may help suggest which manuscript(s) (or from which manuscript family) Sedulius was copying. In both passages of civ. cited by Sedulius, there are only two variant readings from codex E319 listed in the apparatus criticus to Augustine’s text, and both variants are represented in Sedulius’ text.320 They both occur in 22.15 of civ. and are even within the same sentence, which reads: restat ergo, ut suam recipiat quisque mensuram, quam vel habuit in iuuentute, etiamsi senex est mortuus, vel fuerat habiturus, si est ante defunctus…. Instead of an indicative est between senex and mortuus, Sedulius and codex E have the subjunctive, sit. Both are grammatically correct, with only a slight difference of nuance in meaning. The second difference reflected in Sedulius and codex E is the inclusion of an etiam between habiturus and si. Edition p also has these variants, but it contains others as well that Sedulius does not include, and Sedulius pre-dates both of these works, p and E. If both Sedulius and codex E were similar only with respect to the changing of est to sit, then I would be inclined to think that sheer coincidence is as likely as any other reason; however, the inclusion of an etiam where none is grammatically needed leads me to believe there may be a relationship between the two texts, that of Sedulius and codex E, but whether or not it is causal must be decided elsewhere.

After quoting civ. 22.15 nearly verbatim, Sedulius introduces the next excerpt from civ. by writing, Idem in eodem. He does not say the chapter from which he quotes (he did not name

319 Codex E is Eugippii Excerpta, ed. P. Knoell, Vindobonae, 1885 (CC 48, 319).
320 Furthermore, in neither place where Sedulius agrees with codex “E” does Frede offer any variant readings in his apparatus criticus of Sedulius’ text.
chapter 15 either), but merely begins a new excerpt. The passage that follows comes from 22.18 and is substantially more edited than the previous excerpt. The titulus of chapter 18 is *de viro perfecto, id est Christo, et corpore eius, id est ecclesia, quae est ipsius plenitudo*. The opening sentence of chapter 18 claims that in order to understand what the Apostle means by the phrase “perfect man”, it is necessary to examine the context of the passage, so Augustine then quotes Ephesians 4:10-16. Immediately following the recitation of Ephesians 4:10-16, Augustine writes, *Ecce qui est vir perfectus*, which is where Sedulius begins the second excerpt. Because Sedulius is writing a biblical commentary and his readers are thus aware of the biblical context of the phrase, it is not surprising that he omitted the recitation of Ephesians 4:10-16 and began with Augustine’s ensuing analysis.

Many of the differences reflected in Sedulius’ reception of this passage are minor variants and changes and do not warrant our attention; however, some of the omissions and minor changes reveal an astute editor with a clear understanding of Augustine’s text and teaching. For example, Sedulius prefers brevity, so though he retains Augustine’s recitation of 1 Corinthians 12:27 (581, XV.51-52, Frede), which pertinently refers to the bodily unity of Christ and his church, he omits the thematically related, though supplemental quotations of Colossians 1:24 and 1 Corinthians 10:17. Sedulius also omits most of Augustine’s recitation of Ephesians 4:12–16. He does, however, include the last clause of Ephesians 4:16, which is a pivotal reference point in Augustine’s argument and exposition of Ephesians 4:13, the verse of concern at this point in Sedulius’ commentary.

Once Sedulius omits the extra Scripture references, he then skillfully edits the remaining text for purposes of clarity. He adds an *inquit* between *secundum* and *operationem*, once he starts quoting again. This *inquit* functions similarly to the one that Augustine used after *pro*
corpore in the omitted section. Next, he substitutes the term membris for partibus. Membris is a more specific term, which Sedulius may have felt the reader needed, since he did not recite the contextual verses as Augustine did. The sentence does not change, and Green even translates partibus as “members”. From the same sentence, Sedulius adds Christi after plenitudinis where Augustine does not. Christi is understood in Augustine’s text, and its addition by Sedulius only adds clarity.

The final sentence in Sedulius’ excerpt is a recitation of Ephesians 1:22-23, which contains informative differences. The first notable change is Sedulius’ implet for Augustine’s impletur. Green notes that “the verb impletur must be taken as a Graecism, following the original πληρουμένου, a middle voice not much differing from an active in sense.” The CCL edition (48) shows no variant readings for impletur, nor does Frede’s text of Sedulius show any variant readings of his change, implet. Thus, it may be that Sedulius understood what Green referred to as a Graecism, and while that possibility alone does not prove that Sedulius knew Greek, it does at a minimum demonstrate an astute mind and sound understanding of language. Sedulius’ recognition of this Greek nuance is not surprising, because we know that he copied and used Greek even outside of these commentaries. Nevertheless, one might ask, if he changed impletur to implet in his quotation of Augustine, why did he not change his own employment of that word in his commentary, where it appears as adimpletur. Perhaps he was more reserved about editing the actual version of Scripture he used, yet editing someone else’s quotation of Scripture suited his own purposes – especially since it is a different version (Sedulius’ text uses adimpletur, where Augustine’s uses impletur). Augustine continues his analysis of 4:13 after he

322 Green (tr.), 286.
323 Cf. Doyle, 15.
324 Eph 1:23 (565, I.60, Frede).
cites Ephesians 1:22-23, but Sedulius does not include that portion in his excerpt. The unquoted portion discusses the implied meaning of the term *vir*. Augustine explains that the promise of the resurrection is not invalid for women nor does it mean that they will turn into men by virtue of the word *vir*, but rather that *vir* encompasses women just as it does in Psalms 112:1.

In the case of reception studies, what is not included can often be as informative as what is included. The omitted portion is only five lines long, but it is directly relevant to Ephesians 4:13 and perhaps even more so than some of the other parts included previously from the quotation. It does not express anything blatantly unorthodox or heretical, and it does not contradict Sedulius’ teaching elsewhere in either commentary. Since there does not seem to be an obvious reason for the omission, I propose four possibilities in descending order of probability: either 1) the passage is too long for Sedulius (so he is simply economizing), 2) it is a matter so obvious that he does not deem it necessary or informative, 3) the topic has no interest to Sedulius or his audience, or 4) Sedulius disagrees with Augustine, but will only express it via omission, not refutation. To say that the discussion about *vir* and its implication for women is of no interest to Sedulius or his audience may suggest a sexist perspective or at least apathy for women’s concerns. Without attempting to impose twenty-first century sensibilities as my standard for gender analysis, Sedulius does project an emotional and physical sense of superiority to men in his exposition of Eph 5:23 (595, XXIII.6-9, Frede), IPSE SALVATOR CORPORIS. Id est, *Christus saluavit ecclesiam*. Vel: *Vir salvator corporis mulieris* in necessitatibus et doloribus, dum infirmioris sexus est. The alternative interpretation, indicated with *Vel*:, is Sedulius’ own comment, revealing a closer reflection of his personal perceptions than if it had derived from another commentator. Of course, Sedulius may simply be echoing 1 Peter 3:7 (“You husbands in the same way, live with your wives in an understanding way, as
with a weaker vessel, since she is a woman…”), but even as an echo it represents an editorial decision.

Sedulius also excluded chapters 16 and 17, which fall between the two he did excerpt. Chapter 16 synthesizes Romans 12:2 with Ephesians 4:13, so though it is somewhat pertinent, it is possibly too long a chapter to include for only a few relevant lines. Chapter 17 is devoted to the question of whether or not the bodies of women will remain their own gender after resurrection. Again, Sedulius could have excluded it because he disagrees with Augustine’s stance on gender and resurrection, but there is no other evidence to substantiate such an assumption. Also, chapter 17 is the longest out of 15-18, so perhaps its length, in combination with the material being rather simple caused Sedulius to exclude it from his excerpts of civ.

In conclusion, Augustine used Ephesians 4:13 to make an eschatological argument, whereas Sedulius ignores the larger purpose of Augustine and seems strictly interested in the exegetical work most relevant to the purposes of his commentary. Though Sedulius’ commentary may be devoid of the larger eschatological purposes entailed in Augustine, some earlier, gained affinity analogous to those eschatological concerns may be driving his choice to include Augustine’s exegesis of Ephesians 4:13 within his own commentary, such as his past experiences with Viking attacks in Ireland. Also, Sedulius imputes a degree of authority to Augustine, given that Eph 4:13 is one of the few times Sedulius explicitly cites the text he is quoting. Considering the widespread popularity of civ. and the large number of manuscripts produced, it is remarkable how few differences exist between Sedulius’ quotation and a modern critical text of civ. The changes that do exist (and omissions for that matter) reveal not only an editor who understands the text with which he is dealing, but also has an understanding of his

---

325 Sedulius’ omission of Augustine’s name may relate to a certain ideal Sedulius has regarding his role as compiler and editor of various exegeses into one corpus, i.e., that he presents the voices of many authors as one harmonious voice (cf. Contreni, chapter V, 88-89).
own audience and purpose in writing. This reception study allows us to see how Sedulius, an early reader of Augustine, receives two of his most prominent texts. Furthermore, his reception also illuminates the character of Augustine himself and his work. Though the Carolingians appreciated Augustine as much if not more than any other patristic writer, Sedulius employed Augustine judiciously and not pervasively. It is precisely through these few, though substantive, passages that one may realize a deeper understanding of Augustine. In a telling passage from *conf.*, Augustine reveals himself as a practitioner of philosophy, one concerned not merely with academic pursuits of wisdom or learning, but even with the visceral problem of loving amidst losing: “[m]ay my soul praise you, by these things, O God, Creator of all, but may it not be fastened to them by the adhesive of love through the senses of the body. For they go their own way and cease to be…”\(^{326}\) It is in this same pastoral manner that we find Augustine in the pages of Sedulius. In Sedulius’ Prologue, at the point of teaching others about the four methods of interpreting Scripture, Sedulius defers to Augustine – who himself wrote works on both teaching others how to read Scripture (*doc. Chr.*), as well as the importance of subjecting oneself to a trusted and believing expert (*util. cred.*). Likewise, on the crucial issue of a bodily resurrection as raised in Ephesians 4:13, Sedulius again turns to Augustine for practical and authoritative answers. The exegesis provided by Augustine, which Sedulius borrows, bears a practical sense beyond the theoretical realm common in other theologians. Certainly, Augustine lacks exegetical materials in commentary form; nonetheless, Sedulius – like Bede before him – probably could have filled an entire exegetical handbook with Augustinian materials alone. For Sedulius, Augustine is but one among many, yet his impact as a teacher of hermeneutics and

\(^{326}\) *Conf.* 4.10.14-16; CCL 27: *Laudet te ex illis anima mea, deus, creator omnium, sed non eis infigatur glutine amore per sensus corporis. Eunt enim quo ibant, ut non sint…*
pastoral fountainhead for coping with existential struggles manifests itself through Sedulius’ judicious selections and inclusions at pivotal points in his commentaries.

6.5 Reception of Pelagius within the Commentaries

Augustine openly attacked Pelagius for the first time in 415, and by 416 he was excommunicated from the Roman church by decree of Pope Innocent I. Then in 417, Augustine wrote *De gestis Pelagii*; subsequently, in 418 the emperor, Honorius, banned Pelagius from Rome. Pelagius’ commentaries nonetheless enjoyed circulation both within the continent and in Ireland, though without proper attribution and rarely intact. Given the interpolations of the texts by defenders and opponents alike, reconstructing an archetype has proved delicate work. Bruyn has noted problems with Souter’s critical text of Pelagius’ commentaries on the Pauline epistles; however, it remains the only critical text for the commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians and is therefore the text I will use in this reception study.

Souter makes the following claim regarding Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*, “[i]n other words, his procedure was to take Pelagius, text and commentary, as the basis of his *Collectaneum*, omit from the notes what was unorthodox or useless for his purpose, and fill out its meager, glossarial character from the contents of his library.” While Pelagius is the most commonly used source within the *Collectaneum* as a whole, Souter’s quote discounts Sedulius’ likely method, where

---

327 Rees, 10.
328 Cf. Rees, 2-3. For a discussion of the political climate at the time and the African church’s role in securing a verdict of heresy against Pelagius etc., cf. Markus, 214-234.
330 De Bruyn, 25-35.
331 De Bruyn, 30-35.
332 Souter, 1922, 338.
selection and editing consisted of a more involved and intricate process based upon the availability of sources and pedagogical function.

Sedulius’ proclivity for using Pelagius may stem from his days in Ireland, Pelagius’ own homeland, where Sedulius was first trained in biblical exegesis. Michael Herren and Shirley Ann Brown note in their book, *Christ in Celtic Christianity*, that “[i]n the case of Pelagius, we were struck by the fact that not only did his works circulate in Britain, Ireland and also Anglo-Saxon England, there was also scattered evidence for the presence of the Pelagian heresy first in Britain, then in Ireland from the fifth to the seventh centuries.” Even through the eighth century in Ireland there seemed to be individuals who opposed the establishment by using Pelagian doctrines. The idea that Sedulius would have been familiar with the Pelagian commentaries from his days as an Irish monk is further buttressed by Ludwig Bieler, who writes, “Pelagius’ commentary on the Epistles of St. Paul was certainly studied in the Irish schools as late as the ninth century, and Irish expositors of the Bible freely quote their Pilagius [sic].”

A particularly revealing example of Sedulius’ affinity for the work and maybe even person of Pelagius is revealed in his reception of Pelagius’ exegesis of Ephesians 3:16 (‘that He would grant you, according to the riches of His glory, to be strengthened with power through His Spirit in the inner man…”):

IN INTERIORE HOMINE reliqua (3:16). Ubi interior per fidem robustus est, ibi habitat Christus, non ubi exterior saginatus.

IN THE INTERIOR HUMAN etc. Where the interior is strong through faith, Christ dwells there, not where the exterior is fat.

---

333 Herren and Brown, x.
334 Herren and Brown, 9.
335 Bieler, 5.
Sedulius quotes this entry exactly as appears in Pelagius’ commentary on Ephesians 3:16. The exegesis of this verse is elementary, but Sedulius’ reception of Pelagius may here reveal a broader understanding of the person and historical dynamic between Pelagius and his dissenters.

Pelagius is described by his contemporaries as a person of immense physical stature and portliness. Jerome in particular repeatedly insults Pelagius calling him *stolidissimus et Scotorum pultibus praegravatus* (“most stout and stuffed with Scottish porridge”); and in the same work, *grandem et corpulentum* (“large and fat”). Jerome again draws attention to the physical features of Pelagius in his work, *Dialogi contra Pelagianos: Tu ipse qui Catoniaca nobis inflaris superbia et Milonis humeris intumesces…* (“You who are inflamed with the haughtiness of Cato, and have the swollen shoulders of Milo…”). Paulus Orosius (fl. 415), who was sent by Augustine to Palestine with a letter of introduction to Jerome, also commented on the size of Pelagius (whom he probably met during his time in Palestine), *etiam inmanissimus superbia Goliath, carnali potentia tumidus…* (“indeed a tremendous arrogant Goliath, swollen with mighty flesh…”). The latter two excerpts indicate that Pelagius was not merely fat, but that his entire stature was massive. Much of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* is simplified conceptually and linguistically for pedagogical purposes, but as he was probably aware of Pelagius’ reputation as a large man, Sedulius’ inclusion of this excerpt from Pelagius not only reveals two men with a sense of humor, but suggests Sedulius’ wider knowledge of Pelagius’ life and trials.

Pelagius’ exceptional influence on Sedulius is evidenced by the frequency of his reception. The longest stretch of verses without a comment deriving from Pelagius is five: Gal 1:5-9. Though I question Souter’s estimation of Sedulius’ process of selection and editing, he

---

336 CCL 74, *praef. in Jerem.* lib. I, lib. III.
337 CCL 80, I.28.48-49
338 CSEL 5, 2.5.16-18
339 The first half of Gal 1:9 is Sedulius’ own comment, but the second half, as shown below, is copied from Pelagius.
is right to describe Pelagius as the “base” of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*. Just as the form and purpose of the Prologue and seven circumstances largely derive from Servius, while most of the content originates from Jerome, likewise, the form and purpose of Sedulius’ commentaries also largely derive from Servius’ commentary on the *Aeneid*, but most of his content derives from Pelagius. Pelagius’ short, simple, and often literal explanations are ideal for Sedulius’ purposes and therefore lend themselves to continual usage. Below is a series of four verses which are typical of Sedulius’ reception of Pelagius as a general and consistent contributor.

**Pelagius:**


1:10: *Modo enim hominibus suadeo* aut deo? *Numquid propter homines vos suadeo, sicut propter Iudaerum traditiones ante faciebam? Ostendere vult se odia hominum non timentem libere defendere veritatem*… [Pelagius continues for 10 lines].

1:11: … *Quia non est secundum hominem*: (12) Neque enim ego ab homine accepi illud neque edoctus sum, sed per revelationem Christi Iesu. *Neque a me confinxi* neque ab [alio] homine accepi neque a quoquam didici quod gentes sola fide salvarentur.

**Sedulius:**

Gal 1:9: SICVT PRAEDIXIMVS. Id est, praecedenti testimonio. *ET NVNC ITERVM DICO*. Id est, quia repetitum fortius commendatur.

1:10: *MODO ENIM HOMINIBVS SVADEO? Hoc est, numquid propter homines uos suadeo, sicut propter traditionem Iudaerum ante faciebam? Ostendere uult se hodia hominum non timentem libere defendere ueritatem*. SI ADHVC HOMINIBVS PLACEREM. Id est, si Iudaes placerem. CHRISTI SERVVS NON ESSEM. Quia assererem legem et in fide Euangelii Christo non servirem.

1:11: *QVIA NON EST SECVNDVM HOMINEM*. Id est, quia neque a me finxi.

---

340 I.e., when considering the *Collectaneum* as a whole.
These lines are abnormally laiden with Pelagius’ content, but they demonstrate Sedulius’ common recourse to Pelagius and the minimal editing of his work. The changes are all minor, for example, in 1:10 Sedulius moves the genitive plural \textit{Iudaeorum} to follow \textit{traditionem}.

While many of the verses in Galatians and Ephesians do not evoke theological controversy and allow for minimal editing of Pelagius, some of the verses do. It is in these verses especially that Sedulius demonstrates his creative use of sources and reveals that he is not merely a slavish imitator.

6.6 The Augustine and Pelagius Dynamic within the Commentaries

While Pelagius’ commentaries, significantly more than any other, were used by Sedulius in the composition of his \textit{Collectaneum}, this extensive use does not justify labeling Sedulius as a doctrinal Pelagian. As we have seen, his reception of both Augustine and Pelagius is not one-sided. Though Augustine and Pelagius were opponents on certain issues, the common ground between them was often much greater than their differences. This is particularly true for their commentaries, which were written early in each one’s career, before their theological arguments had fully surfaced and been clearly defined and defended. Plumer, who recently published an English translation of Augustine’s commentary on Galatians, suggests that Pelagius most likely had Augustine’s commentary in front of him when writing his own commentary on Galatians. Plumer notes six different verses where Pelagius virtually rewrote Augustine’s exposition.\footnote{Plumer, 58, n. 329.}

Ascribing a label to Sedulius as Pelagian or Augustinian proves to be precarious work as Sedulius occasionally quotes Augustine and Pelagius in the same sentence.\footnote{Cf. Gal 1:3 (513, I.21-23, Frede).} Fifteen years ago, Bertola studied Sedulius’ Pelagianism and concluded that while Sedulius was clearly influenced...
by Pelagius, Pelagius’ influence is exclusive of any adherence by Sedulius to traditional Pelagian doctrines. Bertola focused his study on Sedulius’ commentary on Romans, so this study, which examines the commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians in depth, complements his work. Like Bertola, I would limit the labels “Pelagian” or “Augustinian” to the issues which separated the two during their own times and not merely on Sedulius’ extensive use of either author.

Sedulius proves to be an interesting case study given the circumstances. First, Sedulius is a poet and scholar in high ecclesiastical, social, and political standing working about four hundred and fifty years after Pelagius’ excommunication, and he references both Augustine’s and Pelagius’ commentaries on Galatians as well as many other early and late works of Augustine, such as: *util. cred.* (391/2), *c. Faust.* (397/9), *civ.* (413 426/27), and *praed. sanct.* (428/9). Secondly, in the 840s a Saxon monk named Gottschalk of Orbais taught a double predestination. Leading Carolingian churchmen, such as Hincmar of Reims, opposed him, while others, such as Ratramnus of Corbie, supported him. Two councils, one at Mainz in 848 and another at Quierzy in 849, condemned Gottschalk’s teaching. The latter council also defrocked, whipped, and imprisoned him. This issue was the greatest theological debate of the 840s and probably of the Carolingian period (it eventually involved John Scottus Eriugena), and it even reached Rome. It is inconceivable that Sedulius, living in Carolingian Europe, was unaware of this controversy, and it is almost inconceivable that he could write about predestination without taking it into account, including the difficult issues it raised. It is, of course, possible that Sedulius did not factor the controversy into his explication of predestination, but, given Gottschalk’s fate, anyone writing about predestination likely proceeded with caution.

These often controversial, social, theological, and historical circumstances are certainly relevant when considering Sedulius’ reception of Augustine and Pelagius and will guide our

---

343 Bertola, 54.
choice of the issues to consider. Thus, I will evaluate Sedulius’ reception of Augustine and Pelagius with special respect to the issues that divided them, specifically: predestination, divine grace, and human freedom. First, I will examine Sedulius’ reception of Pelagius and Augustine within specific verses; next I will provide a study of theologically loaded terms that appear throughout, which will help determine both the breadth of Sedulius’ understanding of these writers, and whether or not he consistently subscribes to any doctrinal stance traditionally applied to Augustine or Pelagius.

Augustine, who composed his commentary before Pelagius, would write a verse or a segment of a verse and then comment on it. He did not comment on every word or phrase of a verse in Galatians, but usually included the entire verse in his recitation, so that nearly the entire letter of Galatians is included within the commentary. Pelagius too included the whole of almost every verse, and likewise inserted commentary after each segmented phrase. The partitioning of verses, therefore, reveals some level of interpretation and understanding for each verse and serves as the first level of reception. It is also to be noted that Augustine and Pelagius used different versions of the Bible for their respective commentaries. Augustine used the Vetus Latina, and Pelagius, as one of its very first documented readers, used the Vulgate.

Galatians and Ephesians each offer verses that evoke issues that divided Augustine and Pelagius. Galatians 1:4 is the first verse that I will examine and from it demonstrate Sedulius’ reception of Pelagius and/or Augustine. The commentaries to this verse reveal a subtle yet marked difference between Pelagius’ and Augustine’s exegeses and ultimately their theological stances on these issues.

Augustine writes Galatians 1:4 in two sections. The second section, containing the last phrase of Galatians 1:4 and the whole of Galatians 1:5, is not necessary here for our purposes.
The following is a table of Augustine’s, Pelagius’, and Sedulius’ texts and commentaries for Galatians 1:4:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Augustine, exp. Gal. 3.3 (Plumer, 128)</th>
<th>Pelagius, Gal 1:4 (307, 12-17, Souter)</th>
<th>Sedulius, Gal 1:4 (513, I.24-514, 28, Frede)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Qui dedit semet ipsum pro peccatis nostris, ut eximeret nos de praesenti saeculo maligno. Saeculum praeens malignum propter malignos homines, qui in illo sunt, intelligendum est, sicut dicimus et malignam domum propter malignos inhabitantes in ea. 344</td>
<td>Qui dedit semet ipsum pro peccatis nostris. Ostendit beneficia Christi, quibus exsisterant ingrate, [et] in lege, quae peccatoribus data fuerat, vivere cupientes, cum illis omnia essent peccata dimissa. Ut nos eriperet de praesenti saeculo malo. De malis saeculi operibus, quae committuntur in ipso. Secundum voluntatem dei et patris nostri. Non secundum merita nostra. 345</td>
<td>Qui se dedit. Ostendit beneficia Christi, quibus exsisterant ingrate, in lege, quae peccatoribus data fuerat, vivere cupientes. De praesenti saeculo malo. Id est, de malis saeculi operibus; mundus enim bonus est. Secundum voluntatem dei. Id est, non secundum facultatem vel merita nostra. 346</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Austine’s commentary concentrates particularly on the phrase de praesenti saeculo maligno (“concerning the present evil world”), which Plumer argues is surprising given the heavy Christological matter within the same segment from the preceding phrase: Qui dedit semet ipsum pro peccatis nostris, ut eximeret nos (“Who gave himself for our sins, so that he might rescue us”). 347 I agree with Plumer, who suggests that Augustine ignored the Christological statement and narrowed his focus on “the present evil world” as part of a larger program of rebutting the Manicheans’ dualistic interpretations of the Pauline letters. 348

Augustine argued that the term “present evil world” is in reference to the people who are evil and the inhabitants who are evil and not the house itself. As Plumer notes, this line of thinking preserves

344 “Who gave himself for our sins to deliver us from the present evil world. The present evil world is understood to be evil because of the evil people who live in it, just as we also say that a house is evil because of the evil people living in it.” (Plumer tr., 129).
345 “Who gave himself for our sins. He showed the benefits of Christ to those for whom they existed although they were ungrateful, desiring to live in the law that had been given for sinners, although to those all sins had been forgiven. So that he might rescue us from the present evil age. Concerning the evil works of the age, which are committed in it. According to the will of our God and Father. Not according to our merits.”
346 “Who gave himself. He showed the benefits of Christ to those for whom they existed although they were ungrateful, desiring to live in the law that had been given for sinners. From the present evil age. I.e., from the evil works of the age; for the world is good. According to the will of God. I.e., not according to our ability or merits.”
348 Plumer, 63.
the moral autonomy of an individual and opposes a fundamental tenet of Manichaeism, which is that from the origin of the world, evil has fixed an indelible physical force on the material realm.  

Augustine then combines the second segment of Galatians 1:4 with the entirety of Galatians 1:5 and then his commentary follows.

Pelagius, unlike Augustine, commented on the Christological matter of Galatians 1:4 before focusing on the rest of the verse. Pelagius partitions Galatians 1:4 into three segments. The first segment is the Christological matter to which Plumer was referring, *Qui dedit semet ipsum pro peccatis nostris* (“who gave himself for our sins”). After commenting on this phrase, Pelagius writes the second portion of the verse, *ut nos eriperet de prae
ten saeculo malo* (“so that he might take us from the present evil world”). Augustine’s battles with the Manicheans are well documented, but Pelagius too was intentional in opposing their viewpoints throughout his own exegesis and other writings.  

Whether it was Pelagius’ own initiative or via Augustine’s influence, Pelagius too commented on the phrase “present evil world/age”. He mirrored Augustine’s emphasis on the moral autonomy of the individual as opposed to the material realm of the world as a whole, but Pelagius offered a different interpretation for the phrase “present evil age” than Augustine’s “evil people”. Pelagius claimed the phrase was a reference to evil “works” (*opera*) which an individual, who lives in the world (or, this present age), may do. Both imply that *saeculum* references the framework within which evil exists: the world for Augustine; an epoch for Pelagius. But the ultimate difference between the two is to what or to whom they attribute “evil”: Augustine defines certain human individuals as evil, Pelagius certain works.

The difference revealed in each exposition foreshadows the issues of contention in later

---

349 Plumer, 63 and cf. n. 16.
350 Cf. De Bruyn, 16, n. 102; Campenhausen, 255.
debates, which were not to become prominent in the public sphere for some time.

Nevertheless, the subtle difference is decidedly more marked when we bear in mind that Pelagius’ commentary was written after his famous reaction to the line in *conf.* (X.29.40), *da quod iubes et iube quod vis* (“give what you command and command what you will”). In fact it may be this very line, accompanied by the shocking moral laxity displayed in Rome during Pelagius’ stay there (405), that impelled Pelagius to lay out his own doctrinal understandings by way of expositing the Pauline letters.

Sedulius, who only quoted the word or phrase he wished to expound, concentrated on the phrases *qui se dedit* (“who gave himself”), *de praesenti saeculo malo* (“from the present evil age”) and *secundum voluntatem Dei* (“according to the will of God”). His partitioning of the verse into three segments is superficially similar to Pelagius. However, there are also some immediately noticeable differences from Pelagius, such as Sedulius’ first phrase quoting Scripture, *qui se dedit*.

Sedulius’ text has neither the same exact words (*se* instead of *semet* or *semetipsum* as Augustine had) nor are they in the same order (*se* splits *qui* and *dedit* instead of coming after *dedit*) as appears in Pelagius’ version of this verse, which is odd because Sedulius goes on to quote from Pelagius’ commentary. After copying Pelagius’ remarks about *qui se dedit* almost in their entirety, Sedulius then copies the first half of Pelagius’ comments regarding the “present evil age”: *Id est, de malis saeculi operibus* (“concerning the evil works of the age”). The fact that Sedulius drew from Augustine’s commentary on Galatians in the previous verse implies an

---

351 Rees offers the most thorough account of Pelagius’ life and the doctrinal differences between Pelagius and Augustine et al. in his newly reprinted work (2004) *Pelagius: Life and Letters*; but see also De Bruyn, 17-30 and Ferguson, 114-119.
352 Plumer, 58
353 Ferguson, 115.
354 Cf. below chapter on Sedulius’ biblical text, p. #.
355 There are enough occasions as this one to suggest that Sedulius used a version similar to, but different from the Vulgate text which Pelagius was using. For a more detailed discussion, see above, pp. #.
intentional rejection of Augustine’s analogy of *saeculum* as representing a house, which would give the term *saeculum* a closer resemblance to the world as opposed to an age in which the works are committed. Sedulius however omits the rest of Pelagius’ comment, which is *quae committuntur in ipso*, and instead writes on his own initiative *mundus enim bonus est* (“for the world is good”). Though the latter phrase does derive from Augustine or Pelagius, it certainly echoes their mutual emphasis upon refuting a fundamental Manichaean tenet; however, more importantly, it positions Sedulius closer to the Pelagian exegesis than the Augustinian as Sedulius rejects the analogy of the *saeculum* as representing a house. This rejection of Augustine’s analogy of the *saeculum* to a house should be interpreted not as a rejection of Augustine’s doctrine on inherited sin, but rather as a refinement of Augustine’s own position, as further evidence suggests (see below).

The third and final phrase from Galatians 1:4, upon which Sedulius focused, is *secundum voluntatem dei* (“according to the will of God”). Sedulius again copied Pelagius’ comments regarding this phrase, but added a significant phrase: *facultatem vel*. Thus Sedulius’ commentary reads after the third phrase, *I.e., non secundum facultatem vel merita nostra*. The words *facultatem vel* now position Sedulius in the Augustinian camp with regard to a human’s inability to live a sinless life, as demonstrated in Augustine’s use of this phrase in *Gn. Litt.* 4.9, a passage and phrase which Sedulius again copies as a source for his exposition of Galatians 4:9.  

Sedulius’ reception of Pelagius and Augustine on this verse is a complex matter requiring the consideration of the order in which the commentaries were written and also each author’s historical circumstances, i.e., situations which impose different anxieties. A cursory evaluation of the text reveals that Sedulius may have preferred Pelagius’ organization and wording of some

---

356 See also Augustinus, *civ.*, 22.30.
similar main points between Pelagius and Augustine, evidenced by the fact that Sedulius presented the verse in three similar phrases, as did Pelagius. Also, the only copied words derive from Pelagius (though the additional comment in the second phrase bears resemblance to Pelagian thought), but the additional comment in the third phrase, which is Sedulius’ own, echoes Augustinian and specifically anti-Pelagian thought. The slight variations that Sedulius added to the second and third phrases, which he highlighted in Gal 1:4, suggest that he was conscientious about his editing of Pelagius and is aware of the larger issues at stake. Hence, Sedulius seems willing to focus on the responsibility of individuals for their evil works, yet claims they do not have the ability to abstain from them. I think Wickham is correct in his assessment that the Pelagian question is essentially about “divine help and human incapacity; about the damage done to human nature by Adam’s transgression; about sexuality and the possibility of sinlessness.” It is essential then to decide how and to what extent Sedulius receives the exegesis of Pelagius and Augustine, as their commentaries for this verse explicitly treat the issues of human incapacity and the transmission of sin.

The evidence suggests that Augustine, who wrote his commentary prior to his anti-Pelagian phase, and whose main anxiety in commenting on this verse was to oppose the Manichean interpretation, transposed the phrase “present evil world” onto humans, thus rebutting a dualistic worldview of the material world. Augustine does not explicitly say that humans are inherently evil, but indeed Pelagius realized that Augustine’s wording could be interpreted as such and, if nothing else, as merely an anthropological dualism. So Pelagius then refined Augustine’s interpretation by changing the emphasis from homines to opera. Sedulius then sided with Pelagius’ phrasing, but re-emphasized Augustine’s original concern to specifically deny the classical Manichaean claim that the world has suffered an indelible physical stain of evil, by

---

357 Wickham, 205.
adding, “for the world is good”. Interpreting “present evil age” as people who commit evil works does not preclude someone from also believing that a person’s will is inherently bent towards evil as Augustine would. At this point in the exegesis one may assume, because Sedulius copied Pelagius’ commentary and specifically maneuvered away from Augustine’s homines, that he supported the Pelagian view that humans do not inherit the stain of Adam and are therefore capable of living a sinless life on earth by virtue of a free will. Sedulius, however, avoided such a precarious position by adding the words facultatem vel in the third phrase of Gal 1:4.

This phrase is significant for judging the reception of Pelagius and Augustine, as it places Sedulius in the Augustinian camp regarding a human’s ability to exercise free will in a sinless manner. Initially one might assume that Sedulius, by adding facultatem vel, is contradicting his move away from Augustine’s homines through his use of Pelagius’ phrase opera; but, because facultatem vel is a direct affirmation of an Augustinian position, we can use the phrase facultatem vel as the starting point for establishing Sedulius’ view. Thus, with the two added phrases, mundus enim bonus est and facultatem vel, the decision to copy Pelagius’ line of evil opera and not Augustine’s evil homines can be interpreted as Sedulius further refining Augustine’s opposing of the Manichaean worldview. But, because Augustine’s exegesis is vulnerable to the critique of supporting an anthropological dualism, Sedulius opts for the related yet modified wording which Pelagius presents, thus ultimately adopting an Augustinian view while retaining Pelagius’ phrase.

The next verse I will discuss, Galatians 1:15, evokes the issue of predestination, a pivotal difference between Augustinian and Pelagian thought.\textsuperscript{358} Augustine quotes Galatians 1:15-16

\textsuperscript{358} Wickham, 205.
together before commenting, while Pelagius divides Galatians 1:15 into two segments. Sedulius subsequently partitions Galatians 1:15 into three phrases:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Augustine, exp. Gal. 8.1-2 (Plumer, 134)</th>
<th>Pelagius, Gal 1:15 (Souter, 310, 2-6)</th>
<th>Sedulius, Gal 1:15 (515, II.13-516, 21, Frede)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

Augustine’s commentary for these verses hinges on his understanding of the phrase *de ventre matris meae*. He interprets this phrase to mean the customs of one’s carnal parents, which for Paul is his Jewish identity. Therefore Augustine seems to believe that *qui me segregavit de ventre matris meae et vocavit per gratiam suam* refers to Paul’s salvific Damascus road experience, which led to his conversion from his ancestral Jewish roots to Christianity. The noteworthy matter in this instance is that Augustine, at this early stage in his writing, apparently does not understand *segregavit de ventre matris meae* as a reference to Paul being elected or

---

359 Translation follows Plumer, 135, with modifications. “But when it pleased God, who separated me from my mother’s womb and called me through his grace, to reveal his Son in me that I might preach him among the Gentiles, I did not immediately trust in flesh and blood. One is separated, in a certain way, from one’s mother’s womb, whosoever is parted from the blind custom of one’s carnal parents; on the other hand, one trusts in flesh and blood, whosoever assents to carnal advice from one’s carnal family and relatives.”

360 “However when it pleased him, who separated me from the womb of my mother. He had already separated me from the womb in foreknowledge, when he wanted to, and he did what he knew was about to be. And called [me] through his grace. Not because of my merits.”

361 Never mind that this is an anachronistic understanding, as Paul himself considered “following Christ” as remaining within the Jewish tradition.
predestined into apostleship from his mother’s womb, or more broadly as a statement regarding his predestination for salvation.

Pelagius, however, understands the *cum* temporal clause as connected to the reference *ab utero*, thus pushing the *segregavit* toward a predestinarian meaning. Furthermore, while *praescientia* is the basis of God’s action, and Pelagius tries to soften its predestinarian force, it is a foreknowledge of what apparently must be; therefore, God acts *quando voluit*. Because we know Pelagius’ stance on predestination for the purposes of individual salvation, he may here be referring to the specific apostolic calling of Paul, and not conceding predestination in a salvific sense, but his commentary certainly does not make the distinction. Sedulius however does.\(^{362}\)

Sedulius’ understanding of *segregavit* as *elegit* (“chose”), as opposed to a more literal meaning of *segregavit*, such as “set apart” or “divide”, immediately suggests that he more closely aligns, at the level of grammar and syntax, with Pelagius’ exegesis rather than with Augustine’s. For the next phrase, *ab utero matris*, Sedulius copies the exegesis found in Clm 6235 fol. 16v, b, from the ninth century, containing Irish glosses from the eighth century.\(^{363}\) The material found in this codex is here very close to Pelagius’, but explicitly refers to Paul’s *apostleship* as that for which he was separated from the womb. The force of *segregavit* is best seen in the sentence, *Et hic quaeritur, cur Paulus ab utero segregatus Ecclesiam persequitur, et Petrus a Christo electus, abnegat Christum*. Also the sentence, “[f]rom this it appears, that although he was not immediately called into apostleship *from the womb*, nevertheless he was chosen already in foreknowledge”, reveals that Sedulius interprets *segregavit* as “predestination” by virtue of a later definition of “predestination”, as presented in Eph 1:9 (557, I.68-70, Frede):

“‘predestination’ is the prefiguration of some matter a long time beforehand in the mind of that

\(^{362}\) Cf. Rees, 38-51. Rees there traces the fundamental elements and history of Augustine’s thoughts on predestination and Pelagius’ continual rebuttal.

\(^{363}\) See Frede, 1997, 45*-46*, 56*.
person, who destines what will be in the future.” Furthermore, Sedulius manipulates Pelagius’ commentary on the phrase *segregavit ab utero matris meae* by transposing it to the phrase *et vocavit per gratiam* to extend the predestinarian force of *segregavit* to Paul’s Damascus road conversion. So, even where Augustine expounded a text literally and without any expressed sense of election or predestination, Sedulius edited the exegesis found in Clm 6235 and Pelagius’ commentary to advocate a line of predestination which theologically seems closer to Augustine than to Pelagius.

The Latin word for “predestination” (*praedestinatio*) is used twice in the letter to the Ephesians, once in Ephesians 1:5 and again in Ephesians 1:11. Pelagius divides Ephesians 1:5 into 4 parts, but Sedulius separates Ephesians 1:5 into two sections and only copied Pelagius’ work, albeit in a drastically curtailed fashion.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pelagius, Eph 1:5 (345.19-346.4, Souter)</th>
<th>Sedulius, Eph 1:5 (554, 1.48-555, 51, Frede)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

For Pelagius, as revealed in the above excerpt, predestination is the preordained power of adoption for those who believe; i.e., Pelagius believes that God predestined that all believers have the gift of grace, or God-given power, to become children of God. As will be demonstrated below, this is categorically different from Augustine’s understanding of the term predestination.

364 “[Who] predestined us into adoption. Not from nature. Of sons. He predestined this, so that everybody might have the power to become a son of God, who wished to believe, as it was written; ‘they were preaching the word of God with boldness to everybody wishing to believe.’ Through [Jesus] Christ in himself. So that we might be his members. According to the purpose of his will. Not according to our merits.”

365 “Into the adoption of children. For the Savior is a son by his nature, but we are by adoption. Into himself. I.e., Christ, so that we may be his members. According to the purpose of his will. I.e., not according to our merit.”
Sedulius presumably does not agree with Pelagius’ exegesis of this passage with respect to the discussion on predestination and completely omits all of Pelagius’ exegesis on that issue. The omission of Pelagius’ understanding of “predestination” speaks volumes about Sedulius’ own stance. Though Sedulius does not include here any exegesis which dissents from Pelagius or adversely reflects on an Augustinian line, he does enter into the debate only four verses later when the word *propositum* (“purpose”) is used again. There Sedulius inserts the work of Jerome and Augustine to explain the difference between “purpose” and “predestination”. Sedulius writes in Eph 1:9 (557, I.67-72, Frede),

> Inter propositum et praedistinationem [sic!] hoc interest, quod praedestinatio est alicuius rei praefiguratio multo ante in mente eius, qui distinat quod futurum sit, propositum vero, cum vicina sit machinatio et penne [sic!] cogitationem sequatur effectus. Item: Praedestinatio [sic!] est gratiae praeparatio, gratia vero est ipsa donatio.

Jerome’s contribution is everything between *Inter propositum* and *penne cogitationem sequatur effectus*. The definition given for “predestination” following the *Item* is from Augustine. Though the definition is brief considering the verbosity found in Augustine, nevertheless the difference between Augustine’s and Pelagius’ understanding of predestination is evident. For Augustine, predestination is the preparation of the soul for the call to salvation, whereas grace is the saving action. Thus predestination is a necessary precursor for belief, and ultimately salvation as Augustine articulates in *ench. 62*, which Sedulius copies in Eph 1:10 (558, I.84-88, Frede):

> Those things which are in the heavens are renewed, when that, which was lost in the angels, is restored from humans. But those things that are on earth are renewed, when those humans who have been predestined to eternal life are restored from the corruption of the previous age.

---


Pelagius on the other hand would contend that predestination is the promise of grace for all those who believe. Belief comes first and out of human initiative for Pelagius, which qualifies one to receive the predestined promise of grace, which is the acting power of salvation.

The word “predestination” appears again in Eph 1:11. The same understandings of predestination that Pelagius maintained in 1:9 are seen here too. Pelagius separates 1:11 into three phrases, as does Sedulius.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Pelagius, Eph 1:11 (347, 11-18, Souter)</th>
<th>Sedulius, Eph 1:11 (558, L89-91, Frede)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
</table>

The first phrase explicitly reveals Pelagius’ understanding that only those who believe first are the ones called, hence the phrase “destined before, through faith”, which demonstrates how faith is the necessary precursor for salvation.

Just as occurred in Eph 1:5, Sedulius does not here admit the whole of Pelagius’ comments into his own commentary; however, in Eph 1:5 he simply omitted what he did not agree with, but in Eph 1:11 he includes an abbreviated version of Augustine’s definition for “predestination.” Thus, in Eph 1:11, Sedulius copies the exegesis of Pelagius and Augustine without compromising his previous stance on the issue of predestination. Sedulius achieves this by retaining Pelagius’ comment, “we who out of the Jews believe in Christ” and then omitting the next qualifying phrase of “destined before, through faith”, yet inserting Augustine’s

368 “In whom indeed we have been called. We, who out of the Jews, believe in Christ. Predestinat. Destined before, through faith. Or: Foreknown. According to the will of God. Who purposed to rebuild all things, but first the lost sheep of the house of Israel.”

369 “In which destiny. I.e., by gratuitous grace. We have been called. I.e., we, who out of the Jews believe in Christ. Predestinate. I.e., prepared.”

172
definition of “prepared”. Sedulius thus successfully reframes the exegesis to advocate an Augustinian line of predestination, though he omits “grace”.

Overall, my study of specific verses within Galatians and Ephesians has demonstrated that Sedulius prefers the organization and phrasing in Pelagius’ commentaries; however, with regard to the issues that eventually caused Pelagius to be deemed a heretic, Sedulius is very careful to not only reframe, edit, or omit some of Pelagius’ ideas, but he even affirms Augustinian ones. Ultimately, this section unveils the diverse and complex nature of Sedulius’ Collectaneum as well as his own creativity and learning as he subtly maneuvered and edited these writers’ exegesis to occasionally reveal his own (albeit many times Augustinian) doctrinal stances. The next section extends the reception study of Augustine and Pelagius through certain terms and phrases, which will provide a necessary panorama of Sedulius’ commentaries and test the consistency of his positions.

i) Saeculum

The first term is saeculum, which I translated as “age” in Gal 1:4. A more common translation of saeculum as it occurs in patristic and medieval writings is “world”. Certainly “world” is a legitimate translation of saeculum in many instances, nonetheless such a translation here incurs problems. One problem with such a translation here is that Sedulius does not accept Augustine’s metaphor of saeculum as representing a house and ultimately the world, but rather inserts Pelagius’ exegesis which focuses on the works occurring in the saeculum. Another problem with translating saeculum as “world” in this instance arises because Sedulius juxtaposes saeculum with mundus (appearing in the phrase mundus enim bonus est, which seems to originate from Sedulius and not a source); thus an unintended confusion over seemingly
redundant terms may arise. Either Sedulius is using *mundus* synonymously with *saeculum* or he is using two different terms with different meanings, perhaps toward a larger theological purpose.

If we use Sedulius’ poetry as a control (since we know Sedulius’ poetry to be his own words as opposed to excerpted writings as most often occurs in the *Collectaneum*), we can better judge if his use of *mundus* and *saeculum* are synonymous, or, alternatively, are words with at least subtly different meanings. Here it is the latter which is the case, as *mundus* continually denotes the created physical world whereas *saecula* refers to a lifetime, an age or epoch, or indefinite years (Carmen 23, verse 39, CCM 117): *Nec similem habuit sub caeli cardine mundus* (“A likeness the world, under the axis of heaven, has not held”). *Mundus* is there very different from *saeculum*, which appears in Carmen 6, verses 69-70, CCM 117: *Affluat ipse bonis per candida saecula cunctis, / Gaudens inmensis affluat ipse bonis* (“May he himself abound in all blessings throughout bright ages, / rejoicing may he himself abound in immense blessings.”).

Further help in understanding this verse and the significance of two different terms may be gained when we examine a similar doctrinal point which Sedulius articulates at two other verses in the commentary on Ephesians (5:16 and 6:13), i.e., the location of evil, whether in the creation itself or in the works of human beings. Thus if Sedulius uses *saeculum* and *mundus* with different meanings in his poetry, and if the phrase *mundus enim bonus est* does originate with Sedulius (ultimately leading to a translation of *saeculum* as “age”), then a comparison of his poetry with Eph 5:16 and 6:13 should serve either to indicate a point of contradiction in the writings of Sedulius or to justify a nuanced exegesis that supports a systematic view of a doctrine, which is the rejection of Manichean dualism. A nuanced reading is preferred and suggests a theological erudition combined with judicious editing by Sedulius, where his
Collectaneum would otherwise be mistaken as careless scholarship. As we will see below, evil is attributed to saeculum (Gal 1:4), dies (Eph 5:16) and die (Eph 6:13).

In Gal 1:4 Sedulius receives Pelagius’ exegesis claiming that the works of people in the world give cause for Paul to write, 
*DE PRAESENTI SAECULO MALO*, and not the inherent nature of people themselves. Thus, by saying that the phrase in Eph 5:16, *dies mali sunt* (“the days are evil”) is a metonymy for *his qui in diebus sunt* (“those who are in the days”), Sedulius creates an apparent inconsistency with his claim in Gal 1:4. Such contradictions are known to occasionally occur in Carolingian *collectanea.* However, the metonymical reference to humans should be contextualized with his exegesis in the immediately preceding lines about “redeeming the time” (Gal 5:16 [XXIII.5-7]), where humans are qualified as redeeming the time by doing good works (*bonis operibus*). Therefore, humans who occupy time/days are capable of both good works and maliciousness (*malitia*), thus the metonymy of “days” representing “humans” does not assert a philosophical assumption on the nature of humanity, but rather refers to the nature of their works. Furthermore, both Gal 1:4 and Eph 5:16 offer qualifying statements: in Gal 1:4 Sedulius says *mundus enim bonus est* (“for the world is good”), and in Eph 5:16 he writes, *quia dies mali esse non possunt* (“because days cannot be evil”). Thus in Gal 1:4 the scriptural lemma claims that the age is evil, but Sedulius qualifies that phrase by claiming that evil should be attributed to the works of humans who occupy this age/time, because the created world is good; likewise, Sedulius says in Eph 5:16 that the scriptural phrase claiming that the days are evil is metonymical for humans who do evil works, because days are not capable of being evil. Yet again, Sedulius explains the scriptural phrase “on the evil day” by referring the reader to the exegesis in 5:16 and likening the days as the frame in which life endures trials and tribulations, which would echo the difference highlighted earlier between *saeculum* and *mundus.*

---

370 Cf. above, #.
Thus it follows that *saeculum* is a period of time that is passing away in an eschatological sense, i.e., a temporal reference, whereas *mundus* means the physical creation of God. With this reading, Sedulius maintains the integrity of his exegesis on Gal 1:4 with the exegesis presented in Eph 5:16 and 6:13. For these reasons, I have here translated *saeculum* as “age” and *mundus* as “world”, in order to preserve the distinction which Sedulius seems to represent in 1) his reception of Pelagius over Augustine in his exegesis of the phrase *de praesenti saeculo malo* (Gal 1:4), 2) his use of the two nuanced words in a closely related context (whose distinctive meanings are also reflected in his poetry), and 3) his similarly asserted doctrinal points found in the exegesis of Eph 5:16 and 6:13. Perhaps it was Sedulius’ recognition of *saeculum* as referring to the world in an eschatological, or Augustinian way, which impelled Sedulius to use the phrase *mundus* so as to avoid confusion between the physical world and the temporal framework within which this world suffers evil in an eschatological sense.

**ii) Praefiguratio**

*Praefiguratio* and the verb form *praefiguro* are other terms that are used multiple times. They entail various meanings through Sedulius’ nuanced reception of Pelagius and Augustine.

In Eph 1:9 the term *praefiguratio* takes on a slightly different meaning from *praefiguro*, which occurs in Gal 4:22 and 4:26.

*Praefiguro* and its various forms do not appear in the Latin language until the patristic writers, when they are used often and by many. Lactantius (ca. 240-320) is likely the first author to have used the word, but its root *figura* seems to be a rendering from the Greek *typos*. In 1 Corinthians 10:6 Paul is urging the Corinthians to avoid Israel’s mistakes and, after referring to

---

various examples related in the Old Testament, Paul writes, ταῦτα δὲ τύποι ἡμῶν ἐγενήθησαν, εἰς τὸ μὴ εἶναι ἡμᾶς ἐπιθυμητὰς κακῶν, καθὼς κἀκεῖνοι ἐπεθύμησαν.

The dominant reading for this verse in the *Vetus Latina* is a rendering of the noun *tupoi* as *figurae* (the Vulgate, written over a century after Lactantius, also renders *tupoi* as *figurae*). Thus *figurae* serves as the term for specific references to Old Testament events and people which Paul uses as models for instructing Christians. Therefore, these *figurae* from the Old Testament foreshadowed subsequent theological or paranetic issues relevant to the Pauline communities.

The *regula* established by Paul in Gal 4:22, which is demonstrated through the Old Covenant’s anticipation of the New Covenant, became a hermeneutical principle for interpreting the Old Testament and ultimately for demonstrating the harmony between the two testaments, which De Lubac claims lies at the center of patristic exegesis and serves as the control for their whole doctrine of the “four figures”. Other terms and phrases equivalent to *praefiguratio* also emerged in the patristic era in order to demonstrate the harmony of the two testaments, such as *praefigurationis significatio* (“the significance of prefiguration”) and *Ecclesiae praeformatio* (“the preformation of the Church”) by Hilary (*Tr. myst.*, lib. 1, ca. 39-40; lib. 2, c. 5), or *allegorica praefiguratio* (“allegorical prefiguration”) and *sacramenta prophetica* by Augustine (*civ.*, 17.5.2). The pattern in these emerging terms is the prefix *pra* joined with already common words. Hence it is no surprise to find much of Sedulius’ commentaries consumed with efforts to harmonize the two testaments and thus also to find within these passages words with the *pra* prefix, e.g., Gal 3:13 (*praevidit*, “foresee”), 3:15 (*praejudicare*, “judge”), 3:21 (*praedicta*, “predicted”), 4:22 (*praefiguraverint*, “foreshadowed”), and 4:26 (*praefiguravit*,
“foreshadowed”). Note also in Eph 2:15, where Sedulius’ lines VII.24-25 compare closely with Augustine’s phrase mentioned above, *sacramenta prophetica*.

While Sedulius’ reception of Pelagius in Gal 4:22 is consistent with the traditional patristic employment of the term *praefiguro*, in Eph 1:9 the term, received from Augustine, is used more broadly to indicate predestination in a wider theological sense referring to God’s purposes and intentions. It is however no accident that the same word is used in both contexts, one hermeneutically specific and the other theologically broad, because it is precisely the argument from the fulfillment of Scripture with which Augustine justifies his theological argument for predestination. In chapters 19-22 of *praed. sanct.*, Augustine begins his argument by appealing to scriptural prophecy as a defense of predestination since, according to Augustine, prophecy and its fulfillment are typical operations of God in his will to save humanity. Thus for Augustine, scriptural prophecy is a divine causality and a divine causality cannot be conditioned by the human will (*praed. sanct.* 19.16-19):

> non de nostrae voluntatis potestate, sed de sua praedestinatione promisit. promisit enim quod ipse facturus fuerat, non quod homines. quia etsi faciunt homines bona quae pertinent ad colendum deum; ipse facit ut illi faciant quae praecedit, non illi faciunt ut ipse faciat quod promisit.

But he did not promise from the power of our will but from his own predestination. For he promised what he himself would do, not that which humans would do. Because, even if humans do those good things which pertain to God’s worship, God himself makes them do what he has commanded; they do not make him do what he has promised (to do).

This particular tradition of argumentation for predestination, i.e., from scriptural prophecy to its necessary fulfillment, which may well begin with Augustine, is reflected in Sedulius’ two-fold presentation of the term *praefiguratio* and emerges again in Calvin and the later English Calvinist puritan John Owen (1616-1683). Owen likewise begins with scriptural prophecy to argue that God's grace is irresistible, since it is impossible that the prophecy of salvation through
God, i.e., “to create” in his people “a new heart”, should be conditional, i.e., could not come true; it is “as unto the event infallible, and as to the manner of operation irresistible.”

In fact, Owen's argument as to the nature of regeneration or conversion (as completely the sovereign works of God) is explicitly grounded for him, as he frequently says, in the “thought of Augustine” and is in opposition to the "Pelagians and semi-Pelagians.”

Thus, Sedulius’ dual use of præfiguratio has an understandable basis in his reception of Augustine’s mode of argumentation for predestination, a way of theological reasoning utilized (presumably independently) by later authors. Sedulius’ exceptional borrowing from a non-commentary work to support a specifically Augustinian mode of argumentation reveals not only his breadth of awareness, but also his understanding of Augustinian thought.

**iii) Non Meis Meritis**

Beyond single verses, there is a phrase repeatedly used throughout Sedulius’ Collectaneum, which also reveals an interesting aspect of Sedulius’ reception of the Pelagius and Augustine dynamic. The phrase of interest is non meis meritis. This phrase or similar ones with the word meritum repeatedly appear throughout Pelagius’ expositions on the Pauline epistles and subsequently in Sedulius’ commentaries on Gal (1:4, 3:2, 4:9) and Eph (1:1, 1:5, 2:9, 3:20). With the exception of Gal 4:9, all of the instances derive from Pelagius.

In Gal 4:9, a verse with soteriological implications, Sedulius excerpts from Augustine’s Gn. Litt. 4.9, and the phrase includes the qualifying remark vel facultate (non suo merito vel facultate). As discussed above, this is an important Augustinian concept relating to Augustine’s view, contra Pelagius, that humans are incapable of living a sinless life. Sedulius added this

---

375 See chapters 5-6, same reference, 297-366; chapter 6 is entitled, “In the Instance of Augustine.”
significant phrase from Augustine to Gal 1:4, another verse with a soteriological element (“who gave himself for our sins so that he might rescue us from this present evil age, according to the will of our God and Father”). The rest of the line is from Pelagius (I.28: *I.e., non secundum facultatem vel merita nostra*). The other five instances of the word *meritum* appearing in Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, all of which derive from Pelagius, do not entail the Augustinian phrase *vel facultas*. In two occurrences, the avoidance is explainable. As the phrase occurs in Eph 1:1, it refers to the apostolic calling of Paul, not to individual salvation:

**Paulus Apostolus Iesu Christi per voluntatem. Id est, ex voluntate Dei Patris. Ergo per voluntatem Dei, non meis meritis.**

Also, Pelagius’ commentary on Galatians 3:2 reveals another, albeit slightly different, employment of *meritum*, as he refers to the merit of faith (*ex merito fidei*) as the basis for receiving the Holy Spirit (*ex merito fidei Spiritum sanctum accepistis*). There too Sedulius receives the whole of Pelagius’ remarks without interpolation or significant emendation, presumably because in this instance *meritum* is in reference to faith and not human works. However, in the remaining three instances the verses are more broadly soteriological and yet do not contain the added Augustinian phrase, but instead represent Pelagius virtually in verbatim, 1) Eph 1:5: *Non secundum meritum nostrum*; 2) Eph 2:9: *Id est, suis meritis et non a Deo esse salvatum*; and 3) Eph 3:20: *Non secundum merita nostra*. Identifying a systematic theological pattern in Sedulius’ choice of reception and emendation proves difficult; however, it may be more than coincidence that the differences are contained within canonical books, where Sedulius is inclined to exercise more theological caution with his emendations.
iv) Sola Fide

The Latin phrase *sola fide* (“by faith alone”), which much later was championed by the reformer Martin Luther, seems to originate with Tertullian (ca. 160-220) in his work, *De oratione*. The commentator Marius Victorinus, who uses it in his commentary on Galatians 3:2, is likely the gateway for its employment, since the phrase is subsequently employed by many of the Latin ecclesiastical writers. While the phrase appears in works of both Jerome and Augustine, it does not appear in either Augustine’s commentary on Galatians or in any of Jerome’s commentaries on the New Testament epistles. It does however appear repeatedly in Pelagius’ commentary on Galatians: 1:12, 2:14, 2:20, 3:5, 3:11, 3:22, 3:26 (*per solam fidem*), 5:11, 5:5 (*Hoc contra illos agit, qui solam fidem posse sufficere dicunt*), 5:24 (*hoc contra illos qui solam fidem sufficere arbitrantur*), and 6:16. Four times the phrase appears in Sedulius’ commentary on Gal (2:14, 2:20, 3:6, 3:22), and three of those instances can be attributed to his use of Pelagius as a source (Gal 2:14, 2:20, 3:22). The third instance, Gal 3:6, appears in an unattributed line and is thereby considered Sedulius’ own. The irony is that Pelagius was accused of advocating salvation by means of works, yet he is the only one in a group of himself, Jerome, and Augustine as commentators on Galatians, to include that phrase in his exegesis.

Two of the instances, however, which Sedulius copies from Pelagius, claim that faith alone is not able to suffice. Sedulius receiving Pelagius in Gal 5:5 writes, [*hoc contra illos agit, qui solam fidem posse sufficere dicunt*]. The same line is repeated again in Eph 5:24. This statement seems to contradict previous comments where Sedulius (receiving Pelagius) argues that one is saved by faith alone, or *sola fide* (Gal 2:14, 2:20, 3:6 and 3:22). However, the phrase *sola fide* in the later instances is used as a specific counterpoint to “the law”. In Eph 5:5 and

---

376 According to a search of the TLL, PL, and CLCLT databases.
377 M. Victorinus converted to Christianity post 354 and is a known source for many of the patristic commentators; cf. Cooper, 16.
again in 5:26, however, the statement appears in the context of immoral acts. Thus, Pelagius and then Sedulius are not denying the salvific power of faith alone, but assert the caveat that the fruit of faith alone makes manifest the deeds of the Holy Spirit, as opposed to immoral acts which are symptomatic of the daemon “evil one”. Pelagius makes this clear in his commentary on Ephesians 5:5, but Sedulius’ abbreviated version of Pelagius requires one to read each instance carefully noting the implications of the varied contexts.

Pelagius’ repeated employment of the phrase “not according to my/our merits” (a phrase which weakens the assumption that Pelagius is a theologian who supports salvation merely by works), as well as Sedulius’ nuanced reception of Augustine within those same scriptural contexts, illustrate the danger of oversimplifying the Pelagian and Augustinian theological polarities for later generations. Thus, as can be seen through an independent study of Pelagius’ expositions or even Sedulius’ knowledgeable reception of both Augustine and Pelagius, the dispute between Augustine and Pelagius is not a simple difference between a theology of works versus faith, but a highly nuanced and complicated series of arguments where similarities are as common as differences. The latter may be a reason for which, as a surprise to many scholars, Sedulius and other Irish writers frequently used Pelagius’ exegesis despite his status as a heresiarch. Overall, Sedulius’ reception of the above terms and phrases reveals an astute editor familiar with the historical dynamic of the feud between Augustine and Pelagius and their followers. Sedulius also proves he is no slavish imitator of either, as evidenced by the consistency achieved within his commentaries. Sedulius, however, is required to tread gently, not only because he regularly receives the work of a heresiarch, but also because he composes his Collectaneum at the height of a Carolingian controversy over predestination.

---

378 Crónín, 505.
II. Translations

1 Intentions and Challenges of the Translations

As a translator I have aimed at both accuracy and readability, but when the text necessitated a compromise, I deferred to accuracy, since this is the first translation of these texts into any modern foreign language. In order to provide a greater proximity to the underlying text, I have usually refrained from amplifying Sedulius’ brief and often cryptic phrasing, which may often give his commentary a disruptive, wooden appearance. Sedulius’ method of composition requires the reader, whether of his text or this translation, to read the Pauline epistles alongside Sedulius’ commentary. Sedulius’ text in vacuo may suggest one thing, but another in the proper scriptural context. The latter is especially true for words with multiple functions and meanings, such as *quod* in Gal 1:7, where Sedulius’ lemma reads, QUOD NON EST ALIUD (“which is not another”). *Quod* may be translated various ways in vacuo, but here functions as a relative pronoun whose antecedent (*evangelium*) is in the omitted portion of the scriptural text.

Sedulius’ world typified a patriarchal society, so in an attempt to closely reflect the language and environment of Sedulius, I have retained Sedulius’ gender specific language, e.g., Gal 3:26 is translated “sons of God”, not “children of God”. Many of the other challenges, such as rendering the meaning of words whose value lies more in their function than in their lexical meaning, e.g., *aliter*, are discussed above in the chapters on Sedulius’ Latinity and the pedagogical function of his work.
2 Biblical Text

As to the issue of which biblical text Sedulius uses for his Collectaneum, Frede answers this question in the introduction to the 1961 publication of the critical texts of both Sedulius’ commentary on Ephesians and the Prologue. Alexander Souter, who worked extensively with the manuscripts of Sedulius, Pelagius and various versions of the Latin Bible (including the Vetus Latina and the Vulgate), argued that Sedulius most likely used extracts from Pelagius’ text – who Souter believed to have used an Old Latin text – as the basis for his (Sedulius’) biblical text. But Souter also mentions that Pelagius’ text is particularly similar to the Book of Armagh, which is known as manuscript D (Codex Dublinensis, Trinity College 52). Souter then admits that there are connections (commonalities at points of variance with the Pelagius text) with the Book of Armagh and the Vulgate. Hence, according to Souter, Sedulius’ Latin text is a mixture of the Vulgate and various manuscripts in the Vetus Latina stemma. Frede then compared the biblical text as quoted by Sedulius to the Vetus Latina, as well as the Vulgate and the Book of Armagh and afterwards offered a caveat to Souter’s assumption that Sedulius just took on the text of Pelagius. Frede discovered that though similar to the Book of Armagh in many places, Sedulius’ biblical text lies closer to the Vulgate than does the Book of Armagh, thus making Sedulius’ text a better witness for an older Irish version of the Vulgate which lies behind D. Further complicating the matter is Sedulius’ practice of providing only the portion of the biblical text with which he is concerned.

379 Frede makes brief mention of this question in the new critical edition of the entire corpus, published 1997 (10*), and refers the reader to his 1961 edition.
380 Souter, 1922, 338.
381 Souter, 1922, 338.
382 Frede, 1961, 91: “Schön die Feststellung über Art und Aufbau des Kommentars sollte vor der Annahme warnen, Sedulius habe seinen Paulustext ‘from his copy of Pelagius’ entnommen.”
383 Frede, 1961, 92-95.
An example of Sedulius differing from all three texts can be seen in Eph 1:8 (556, I.59, Frede). There Sedulius’ Lemma reads: QUAE SUPERHABUNDAVIT IN NOS. However, the Vulgate, the Book of Armagh, and Pelagius’ Lemma of this portion all read, QUAE SUPERABUNDAVIT IN NOBIS. Concerning the biblical text which is used in the quotes from his sources, Frede concludes that Sedulius often changes them to the biblical text which he is using. An example of this occurs in Eph 1:14, where Sedulius is quoting from Pelagius’ text, but changes Pelagius’ citation of Scripture. Pelagius writes (348, 11-14, Souter), “IN REDEMPTIONEM ADQUISITIONIS, IN LAUDEM GLORIAE IPSIUS. Quos redimendo suo sanguine adquaesivit, ut etiam in hoc laudemus gloriæ eius.” The phrase redimendo suo sanguine adquaesivit is a quotation of Acts 20:28. Sedulius thus copies everything exactly as Pelagius has written, with the exception of the verb adquaesivit. Sedulius writes in his text, adquisivit, which is the same reading as the Vulgate supplies.

---

384 Frede, 1961, 95, n. 1.
3 The Manuscripts, Text, and Formatting

The majority of Frede’s introduction to Sedulius’ Collectaneum is concerned with identifying and describing the various manuscripts used to edit his 1997 publication, so I will not repeat that information here. On page 60* of that introduction he provides a Conspectus Codicum et Editionum.\(^{385}\) Out of the eight entries (excluding Clm 6235 and Clm 14277 and Wb, glossae codicis, which are mentioned among the sources) only two contain the Prologue: “A” and “W”, while all of them have both Galatians and Ephesians, except “A”, which contains neither. Contra Souter,\(^{386}\) Frede contends that none of the manuscripts go back to Sedulius.\(^{387}\)

Frede’s text entails an apparatus criticus as well as scriptural cross references throughout the text. He also includes in the left margin of each text the marginalia\(^{388}\) as they appear in many of the earliest manuscripts. As a service to the reader, I have retained the same paragraphing format as used in the Latin texts; however, since Frede’s numbering system of the Latin text does not exactly coincide with my translation, I have denoted which lines from the Latin text are translated in each paragraph by placing those line numbers in parenthesis (in regular font) before each translated paragraph. The Prologue comprises just 229 lines without sections; however, Frede separates Galatians and Ephesians into sections by Roman numerals, and then each section contains numbered lines in increments of five.

Each translated verse is presented in the same format as it appears in the Latin text; i.e., for the commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians, the excerpt of the Bible verse which Sedulius comments on is written in capital letters. The commentary is in regular font, but any words in the commentary which are scriptural are written in italics.

\(^{385}\) Frede, 1997, 60*.
\(^{386}\) Souter, 1916, 184-228.
\(^{387}\) Frede, 1997, 39*-40*.
\(^{388}\) See above, pp. #, for a brief discussion of these marginalia.
First I write the chapter number and verse in bold font. Next I place Frede’s numbering system, denoted by a Roman numeral and line numbers, in parenthesis. For example, Gal 1:1, lines 1-6 is formatted by Frede in the following way:

I PAULUS APOSTOLUS, NON AB HOMINIBUS (1,1). Hoc est, non ab humana praesumptione, ut illi dicunt. Hoc contra eos, qui Paulum dicunt subito prorupisse in apostolatum, vel a majoribus ordinatum. Ergo non ab hominibus, vel per apostolos alios. NEQUE PER HOMINEM. Ut Aaron per Moysen. Quattuor

6 sunt apostolorum genera. …

The formatting of my translation of this verse is as follows:

1:1 (I.1-20) PAUL AN APOSTLE NOT BY HUMAN BEINGS. I.e., not by human presumption, as they say. This is against those who say that Paul suddenly rushed forth into apostleship, or was ordained by the elders. Therefore not by human beings or through other Apostles. NOR THROUGH A HUMAN BEING. As Aaron through Moses. There are four types of apostles….

Also, I did not transfer Frede’s extensive scriptural cross references into my translation; however, when a use of Scripture occurs that is not noted by Frede in his Latin text, but is one that I have judged as particularly relevant, I have included that reference as a footnote in my translation.
4 Translations

Prologue

(1-11) Before we come to interpreting the apostolic words, let us first examine certain axioms, i.e., the main principles. In the first place, therefore, it must be known that there are seven types of peristasis, i.e., of circumstance, without which no questions are asked, no arguments are investigated, and no art or work can stand. These, moreover, are the seven types of circumstance: the person, matter or deed, cause, time, place, manner, and material or ability: i.e., who did it, what did he do, why did he do it, when was it done, where was it done, and how was it done, e.g., whether well or poorly, foolishly or wisely, by what material or ability, e.g., whether that man killed the other by sword or poison.

(12-31) Thus let us first investigate certain things about the person, which is the first circumstance. A person is, moreover, according to logicians of rational nature an indivisible being or substance whose manifestation is manifold. For a person is examined in many ways, i.e., by race, citizenship, parents, education, professions, dignity, habits, death, name and other aspects which are too long to list out individually now. Therefore, Jerome says thus about Paul: Paul an Apostle from the tribe of Benjamin was born in a town of Judea, Egiscalis by name. After the town was seized by the Romans, he moved to Tarsus of Cilicia and was sent by his parents to Jerusalem and studied the law at the feet of Gamaliel. Already an accomplished persecutor, he set off to Damascus and on the way he was seized by the Lord, and after being baptized by Annanias, he preached Christ. Appointed Apostle of the Gentiles by the Apostles, with Barnabas alongside, he appealed to Caesar because he was being persecuted by the Jews, and therefore was sent, in shackles, to Rome by Felix in the second year of Nero’s rule and for two more years was daily disputing with Jews in unshackled custody. After this, preaching in
the West for ten years and again returning to Rome, he was decapitated for Christ in the
fourteenth year of Nero’s rule, in fact, he was buried in the thirtieth year after the Passion of the
Lord.

(32-67) Having become aware of these things, we must also not keep silent concerning
the name of that person. Thus it must be known that “Saulus”, as some believe, was his name
before he took on the Christian faith; Jerome in his exposition of the letter to Philemon the
Colossian, declares this to be completely untrue using these words: “but it must not be thought,
as it is read by the more simple Latinists, that previously he was said to be ‘Saulus,’ and not
‘Saul,’ because he was from the tribe of Benjamin where this name, “Saul”, is more common;
accordingly that famous ‘Saul,’ the king of Juda who persecuted David, was from the tribe of
Benjamin.” The fact that he is said to be ‘Saulus’ is not astonishing, for Hebrew names are
deprecated by way of adaptation to Greek and Roman cases, so that for ‘Joseph’, ‘Josephus’ and
for ‘Jacob’, ‘Jacobus’, thus also for ‘Saul’, ‘Saulus’ is said in our tongue and speech. But he was
addressed as ‘Paulus’ after having accepted the Christian faith; but it must be noted, as Jerome
says in his Commentary Tractate on Daniel that the Hebrew language does not have the letter
‘p’, but for that it uses ‘phe’, whose force in Greek speech sounds like ‘phi’. From that we
understand that among the Hebrews [his name sounds like] ‘Phaulus’ or ‘Phaul’ through the
letter ‘phe’. Likewise in the investigation of the letter to Philemon: Paulus, he says, is named
after Seregius Paulus; as Roman emperors are named after conquered nations, thus also Saulus
was sent to preach to the Gentiles and he brought back a trophy of his victory from the first
booty of the Church, under the proconsul Seregius Paulus, and raised a banner, so that he might
be called Paulus instead of Saulus. Saul, or Saulus, is interpreted as “sought after” or “a test of
respect;” truly, Paulus is interpreted as “wonderful,” and this according to Jerome. According to
Ambrose, Saul is interpreted as “tirelessness” or “a test,” but Paul is interpreted as “tranquil.” For it must not be omitted that Benjamin was first named Benoni, i.e., son of my sorrow, as Jerome shows in his Book of Hebraic Questions, since after his birth his mother, Rachel, died; but therefore Jacob named him Benjamin, i.e., son of the right woman. That is in conformity with Paul, according to the mystical interpretation, who appearing as a persecutor of Christianity was first named as it were Benoni, i.e., son of sorrow, and after he himself had been converted from wolf to sheep, he became a mystic Benjamin, i.e., a son of the right woman.

(68-87) Hereto we have talked about the “person,” now let us talk about the matter or deed which is the second circumstance. We understand as the matter and deed the work of the fourteen letters; for the Apostle wrote ten letters to eight churches: namely, one to the Romans, two to the Corinthians, one to the Galatians, one to the Ephesians, one to the Philippians, one to the Colossians, two to the Thessalonians, one to the Hebrews; he even wrote four letters to his disciples: two to Timothy, one to Titus and one to Philemon. But if anyone asks why he wrote ten letters to eight churches, to that person we must briefly respond: so that he might show that the doctrine of the New Testament does not differ from the Decalogue of the law. But it is not without reason that he wrote ten prefaced letters to eight churches: for as the number seven frequently designates the Old Testament on account of the day of the Sabbath, thus also the number eight on account of the resurrection of the Lord which shone on the eighth day, expresses the grace of the New Testament. It must also be known that the Apostle had written all these letters in Greek speech except the one to the Hebrews as Jerome testifies, and, he also testifies, Clement the disciple of the Apostle Peter arranged and decorated the sentences of Paul in personal speech.
And since we spoke about the number of these letters, we should also consequently expound upon the order of those very letters. For it astonishes some people why the letter to the Romans is placed first, although common sense reveals that it was not the first one written; for he testifies that he wrote it upon departing for Jerusalem, when he had already asked the Corinthians and others beforehand in letters that they would accept a gift that he was about to carry with him. Whence certainly some people want all the ordered letters to be understood thus that the letter that had been written later was placed first and that one could progress through the individual letters in steps to the more perfect truths. For most of the Romans were so uncultivated, that they did not understand that they had been saved by the grace of God but thought that they were saved by their own merits and from this misunderstanding two groups clashed among themselves. Therefore, bearing in mind the prior faults of the heathens, he asserts that they needed to be instructed.

To the Corinthians, however, he says already that the grace of knowledge is granted in such a way that it does not chide everyone so much as it rebukes them as to why they did not chide the ones sinning. Thus he says: “it is said that there is fornication among you”, and again “when you are gathered, with my spirit present, hand such a one over to Satan”; but in the second letter they are praised and reminded that they should progress more and more.

The Galatians are not accused of any crime except that they believed in the most cunning false apostles.

The Ephesians are completely without blame but are worthy of much praise who preserved the evangelical faith.

And the Philippians are even praised much more who did not wish even to listen to the false apostles.
(114-117) Upon the Thessalonians, nonetheless, he bestows two letters of all praise because they preserved not only the faith of truth unharmed, but because they were even found steadfast while suffering persecution from their own fellow citizens.

(118-120) The Colossians, however, were such that although they had not been seen by the Apostle physically, they were considered worthy of this praise: “though absent in the body but present in the spirit I am rejoicing and seeing your discipline.”

(121-128) But what must be said concerning the Hebrews whose imitators, as it is said, the Thessalonians became, who were praised most as he himself says, “and you brothers have become imitators of God’s churches which are in Judea; for you have endured the same things from your own countrymen which they did from the Jews”? He remembers among those Hebrews also the same things, saying: “For you were compassionate with the prisoners and endured the seizing of your possessions with joy knowing that you have a better, everlasting possession.”

(129-138) But to allow no cloud of ignorance to develop from the obscurity of the prefaces’ names, it is desirable to explain the individual names by particular interpretations: “Romans” is interpreted as “sublime” or “thundering”; “Rome” in Greek means “virtus” in Latin. Corinth means “raises itself up”; Corinthians means “they are raising themselves”; Galatia means “magnificent” or “translation”; therefore Galatians means “magnificent” or “translators”. Ephesus means either “the will of someone” or “my plan.” Philippians means “the mouth of a torch.” Colossians means “closing” or “completing”. Thessalonians means “the fast ones.” Hebrews means “the transient.” Timothy means “kind.” Titus means “seeking” or “good.” Philemon means “miraculously given.”
Thus far covers the second, now let us briefly expound upon the third circumstance which is called “the cause”. Thus it must be known that on account of this general and, as it were, uniform cause, Paul had written all his own letters: in as much as he profited by bedewing the spouse of Christ, the Church, with heavenly doctrine and in as much as he illuminated the Church with manifold treasures of wisdom and knowledge, repulsing the shadows of ignorance. But particularly the letter to the Romans was written in four manners. The first manner is about himself in which he shows what he himself is, i.e., an Apostle, and what he was, i.e., a persecutor, and whose servant he is, obviously that of Christ Jesus. The second causal manner is about the Gentiles who did not preserve the natural law; the third is about the Jews who scorned the law of the New Testament given to them; the fourth is about both people, who are not justified by works of law but through the grace of salvation. Moreover, for two reasons, as Origen says, the letter to the Romans is considered to be more difficult than the others because 1) it occasionally uses confused and less clear expressions, and 2) it stirs more questions in it.

But concerning the time, which is the fourth circumstance, we cannot be so sure, because nowhere do we read a definite statement at whose emperor’s time the individual letters were written by the Apostle. Nevertheless it is clear according to the historical truth that the Apostle disseminated the word of Christ at length and widely at the times of four emperors: namely, Tiberius, Gaius, Claudius, and Nero.

These having been briefly compressed, we should now explain about place. Thus it must be known that the Apostle wrote all the prefaced letters in the seven principal places which are Corinth, Ephesus, Troy, Rome, Athens, Macedonia, and Italy. For the one which is entitled to the Romans, he had written in Corinth, although Origen disagrees with this
assumption, saying: Cenchrea is a place near Corinth, indeed a port of Corinth itself, in which the Apostle wrote the letter to the Romans. Likewise, he wrote in Ephesus two letters: First Corinthians and Galatians. He also composed one in Troy, i.e., Second Corinthians; but in Rome he wrote five letters: Ephesians, Philippians, Colossians, Second Timothy and Philemon. Likewise in Athens he produced three letters: First and Second Thessalonians and Titus; but he bound with a pen one in Macedonia, First Timothy, and one in Italy, Hebrews.

(179-190) Now the order demands that we should thoroughly examine the quality of this work. But is anyone ignorant that the quality, or manner, of the apostolic doctrine is arranged wisely, eloquently and profoundly? Whence also Jerome says: I shall quote Paul the Apostle, because however often I read him, it seems to me, that I hear not words but thunderings. Read his letters, especially those to the Romans, Galatians, and Ephesians – in which Paul is totally engaged in dispute, and in whatever way you look there are thunderbolts. He sticks to his purpose, seizes everything which he has touched, retreats so that he might overcome, simulates flight so that he might kill. There are four types of divine Scripture: history, prophecy, proverbs and simple doctrine to which the letters of Paul belong.

(191-196) There remains the seventh circumstance, which is called “material or means,” whose nature is distinguished as manifold. For there are so many materials of single letters, as there are individual letters prefaced with titles, e.g., about virgins, widows, bishops, elders and other themes which are too many to enumerate individually.

(197-229) Thus these seven circumstances having been considered or examined, and like keys having been dispatched, we now intend to proceed to unlock the apostolic words if granted by the grace of the Holy Spirit, who dictated this through the Apostle as his sounding instrument, so to speak. Augustine in his book about the utility of believing, wrote: all divine Scripture is
fourfold: history, aetiology, analogy and allegory. Therefore Scripture is handed down “according to history”, when it is taught what has been said or done and what has not been done, but merely written as if it had been done. “According to aetiology” occurs when what is shown demonstrates why it has been done or said. “According to analogy”, when it is demonstrated that the two testaments, the Old and New, are not contrary to each other. “Allegory” occurs when it is taught that certain things which were written are not to be received literally, but must be understood figuratively. The Lord Jesus Christ and the Apostles used all these ways; from “history” it was taken when it was objected that his disciples plucked grains on the Sabbath: “Have you not read, he said, what David did when he was hungry and those with him, how he entered into the Lord’s house and ate the breads of presentation which were not allowed for him to eat nor for those with him, but only for the priests?” But “aetiology” pertains to the following, that, when Christ had prohibited a wife to be sent away in divorce except for the reason of fornication and when it was then argued by his interrogators that Moses had permitted the license of divorce in the given book, he said, “This Moses did on account of your hardened hearts.” For here a reason is given why divorce was well permitted by Moses for that time, so that this which Christ was prescribing could be seen already as different times.389 Next is “analogy,” by which the agreement of the two testaments is apparent. It remains to give an example for “allegory”. Our liberator himself uses allegory in the gospel from the Old Testament: “This generation, he said, seeks a sign and it will not be given unless it is the sign of Jonah the prophet. In the same way as Jonah was in the belly of the whale for three days and three nights, likewise the son of man will be in the heart of earth for three days and three nights.”

389 I.e., that divorce was only admitted in the case of fornication, which is a tightening of divorce practice.
On the Letter to the Galatians

1:1 (1.1-20) PAUL AN APOSTLE NOT BY HUMAN BEINGS. I.e., not by human presumption, as they say. This is against those who say that Paul suddenly rushed forth into apostleship, or was ordained by the elders. Therefore not by human beings or through other Apostles. NOR THROUGH A HUMAN BEING. As Aaron through Moses. There are four types of apostles. One, which is neither by human beings nor through a human being, but through Jesus Christ and God the Father, as with Isaiah and the rest of the prophets as well as Paul himself. Another which is by God, but through a human being, as with Jesus the son of Nun, by God, but through Moses. The third kind, is that one which is by human beings and not by God, whenever someone is ordained by the favor of human beings, as now we see that many are elected into priesthood not by the judgment of God, but by favor bought of the public. The fourth is that which is neither by God nor by a human being nor through a human being, but by oneself, as are all false-prophets and false-apostles. BUT THROUGH JESUS CHRIST. I.e., who chose Peter and the other Apostles. AND GOD THE FATHER, WHO RAISED HIM. By which one work of the Father and the Son is shown. WHO RAISED HIM FROM THE DEAD. For this reason he mentions God the Father, who raised him from the dead, so that through him he might establish the power of his apostleship, since he was sent by the Father himself.

1:3 (1.21-23) GRACE TO YOU. By which our sins are freely forgiven. Here you understand, “... be multiplied, I pray.” AND PEACE. In which they had been reconciled to God with all their transgressions pardoned.

1:4 (1.24-28) WHO GAVE HIMSELF. He shows the benefits of Christ, by which those who wanted to live under the law, which had been given to sinners, were proved to be ungrateful.
FROM THE PRESENT EVIL AGE. I.e., from the evil works of the age: for the world is good.

ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF GOD. I.e., not according to our ability or merit.

1:5 (I.29) AMEN. Conclusion of the preceding prologue.

1:6 (I.30-31) I AM AMAZED THAT YOU ARE THUS. Some breeze or other turns you aside from an upright faith.

1:7 (I.32-37) WHICH IS NOT ANOTHER. For it is not possible that another true gospel exists, except the gospel of Christ. For what is contrary to the truth must not be called gospel. AND THEY WISH TO DISTORT THE GOSPEL OF CHRIST. They turn the gospel back into the law, since they follow only the letter of the gospel; they put what is behind in front, and what is in front they place behind.

1:8 (I.38-39) BUT EVEN IF WE. I.e., we would evangelize. ANATHEMA. Curse.

1:9 (I.40-42) AS WE SAID BEFORE. I.e., in the preceding testimony. SO NOW I SAY AGAIN. I.e., because repetition emphasizes the point more strongly.

1:10 (I.43-49) FOR DO I NOW PERSUADE PEOPLE? I.e., surely I do not persuade you because of people, just as I was doing before because of the tradition of the Jews? He wishes to show that, not fearing the hatred of the people, he freely defends the truth. IF I WERE STILL PLEASING PEOPLE. I.e., if I were pleasing the Jews. I WOULD NOT BE A SERVANT OF CHRIST. Because I would preserve the law and I would not serve Christ in faithfulness of the gospel.

1:11 (II.1-2) BECAUSE IT IS NOT ACCORDING TO HUMAN BEINGS. I.e., I did not fashion it fictitiously of my own accord.
1:12 (II.3-5) NOR WAS I TAUGHT IT. Nor did anyone teach me, that I might understand the parables and obscure statements of the gospel. BUT THROUGH REVELATION. I.e., on the road to Damascus, or by revelation of the Holy Spirit.

1:13 (II.6-10) FOR YOU HAVE HEARD ABOUT MY PREVIOUS LIFE-STYLE. He wants to show how firmly he held to Judaism, and faithfully fought the Christian Church on behalf of the Jewish Fathers’ traditions, so that we might understand that he could not be separated from his Jewish convictions by human counsel except by divine revelation. HOW BEYOND MEASURE. I.e., of other persecutors.

1:14 (II.11-12) FOR MY FATHER’S TRADITIONS. I.e., not for the commandments of God.

1:15 (II.13-21) WHO SEPARATED ME. I.e., chose. FROM THE WOMB OF MY MOTHER. From this it appears, that although he was not immediately called into apostleship from the womb, nevertheless he was chosen already in foreknowledge. And here one asks, why Paul, separated from the womb, persecutes the Church, and Peter chosen by Christ, denies Christ: namely, so that they might learn to have compassion for the weak, and so that they might show an example of penitence. AND HE CALLED THROUGH GRACE. By saying: Saul, Saul. The one who had separated even me from the womb in foreknowledge, when he wanted to, he accomplished what he knew was about to be.

1:16 (II.22-28) IN ME. Through me. I DID NOT SUBMIT TO FLESH AND BLOOD. Either it means, as it is rendered better in Greek: I did not confer with flesh and blood. Or: that I did not learn anything from the Apostles – as others think. Paul plainly did not confer with flesh and blood after the revelation of Christ, because he did not wish to throw his pearls before swine, but he gradually transformed from flesh and blood into spirit. Or alternatively: I DID NOT SUBMIT TO FLESH. I.e., to the Jewish race.
1:17 (II.29-36) NOR DID I GO TO JERUSALEM. I.e., for the purpose of learning from them. One asks why Paul says that he did not go to Jerusalem but departed to Arabia, when Luke narrates in the Acts of the Apostles that Paul went to Jerusalem, when attacks were made upon him in Damascus. For this reason, therefore, Luke omitted Paul’s journey to Arabia, because perhaps Paul accomplished nothing of worth in Arabia. BUT I WENT TO ARABIA. But I went immediately from Damascus to Arabia, so that I might teach what had been revealed to me by the Lord.

1:18 (II.37-41) THEN AFTER THREE YEARS. He shows that he did not need to be taught, who already had preached for three years. TO SEE PETER. I.e., for the sake of seeing, not for the sake of learning anything. FOR FIFTEEN DAYS. The figures seven and eight signify the OT and NT respectively, because of the Sabbath and the eighth day of the resurrection of the Lord.

1:19 (II.42-54) BUT, I DID NOT SEE ANY OTHER OF THE APOSTLES. Lest he seem to learn from others. EXCEPT JAMES THE BROTHER OF THE LORD. Lest however you think this is James the son of Zebedee, read the book the Acts of the Apostles: he had already been killed by Herod; thus it reads in Acts: King Herod sent his troops, so that he might afflict some from the Church. And he killed James the brother of John with the sword. Eusebius says in the second book of his Histories: Then the Jews killed James, who was called the brother of the Lord, because of the fact that he was the son of Joseph, who was considered, as it were, the father of Christ, since to him had been betrothed the virgin Mary. This James, I say, who was also given as a cognomen “the Just” by the ancients, because of the merit of his virtues and the claims of a prominent life, they have recorded was the first to receive the See of the church, which is in Jerusalem.

390 I.e., on his way from Jerusalem.
1:20 (II.55-56) IN WHAT I WRITE TO YOU, etc. The things which I write are true, and I confirm this with God as my witness.

1:22 (II.57-58) AND I WAS UNKNOWN BY APPEARANCE etc. For this reason he says this, lest anyone think that he had learned the gospel from those too.

1:24 (II.59-60) AND THEY WERE GLORIFYING GOD IN ME. I.e., who alone could accomplish this.

2:1 (III.1-3) THEN AFTER FOURTEEN YEARS. I.e., when a question was raised concerning the burdens of the law. WITH BARNABAS. I.e., with someone who had been circumcised. AND WITH TITUS. I.e., who came from the Gentiles and was therefore not circumcised.

2:2 (III.4-8) AND I DISCUSSED. I did not learn, but only discussed. BUT PRIVATELY. I.e., in secret because of the Jews who were still Judaizing. LEST BY CHANCE I WAS RUNNING IN VAIN. I.e., as the Judaizers esteemed our freedom, because we are not under the law of circumcision.

2:5 (III.9-11) TO WHOM WE DID NOT YIELD EVEN FOR AN HOUR. I.e., because we did not circumcise Titus. It is written badly in the Latin codices, to whom we yielded for an hour.

2:6 (III.12-15) WHATEVER SORT THEY WERE AT SOME POINT IN THE PAST. I.e., when the Lord taught them in his own presence. NOTHING TO ME. I.e., teaching. IT MATTERS. I.e., “concerns” or “there is a difference.” GOD DOES NOT PAY ATTENTION TO THE EXTERNAL CIRCUMSTANCES OF A PERSON. Because neither does the duration of time that someone believed influence the judgment about his faith, nor the external circumstances influence the judgment about his or her work.

---

391 The commentator may here misunderstand the idiom ‘mea interest’. I.e. he thinks ‘doctrina’ must be supplied with ‘mea’.
2:9 (III.16-18) THEY GAVE THEIR RIGHT HANDS IN FELLOWSHIP. Which is a sign of peace and unity. For they agreed that we ought to teach thus. TO ME AND BARNABAS. For both had been sent, to preach to the Gentiles.

2:10 (III.19-22) ONLY THAT WE BE MINDFUL OF THE POOR. I.e., of the saints who were in Jerusalem, who distributing all their possessions, were laying the proceeds down at the feet of the Apostles. Or: of those whose goods had been taken by the Jews, as we read in Hebrews.

2:11 (IV.1-9) BUT WHEN PETER HAD COME etc. The weakness of the Galatians compels him to tell this, that not only did the other Apostles not converse with him, and yet he was not less worthy than they, but that he himself corrected something in Peter, who was the leader of the Apostles. Alternatively: although they had extended the right hand of concord and peace to me, nevertheless I opposed Peter, seeing that he was acting contrary to the rule of the Gospel. And he does this entirely so that he might show that he was never a supporter of circumcision, a matter about which the false Apostles were fabricating lies concerning him. SINCE HE HAD BEEN CENSURED. I.e., worthy of censure.

2:12 (IV.10-11) HE WAS EATING WITH THE GENTILES. I.e., as was revealed in the dish.

2:13 (IV.12-14) AND IN HIS DECEIT. I.e., in his hypocrisy, while he was believing one thing in the presence of God, and doing another in the presence of people.

THUS ALSO BARNABAS. I.e., who nevertheless had been sent with me to the Gentiles.

2:14 (IV.15-25) I SAID TO PETER IN THE PRESENCE OF ALL. For since the sin was committed in the presence of all, it had to be criticized in the presence of all. For this reason, moreover, he said this, so that from the Jews – pride concerning circumcision, and from the Gentiles – despair, might be taken away. IF YOU, ALTHOUGH YOU ARE A JEW, LIVE LIKE A GENTILE. I.e., if you do not preserve (the tradition into) which you are born, how do
you make them hold to that which they were not born into? He gives a justification, and does not cause offense. LIKE A GENTILE. I.e., not like a Jew. I.e., you know that you found life in Christ not by works of the law, but by faith alone, just as the Gentiles too. WHY ARE YOU FORCING THE GENTILES TO JUDAEIZE? I.e., while you withdraw yourself from the Gentiles as if from sinners. TO JUDAEIZE. I.e., to give honor to circumcision, or to observe the letter (of the law).

2:15 (III.26-38) WE ARE JEWS BY BIRTH. We, he said, I and you, O Peter. He associated himself with Peter, so that it would not seem like he was causing offense to him. Jerome says, concerning this question, that Paul delicately handled this, by not truly opposing Peter, but blames Peter in kind, by criticizing others who observe the letter through him. For why would Paul blame Peter for agreeing with the Jews, since he himself circumcised Timothy on account of the Jews? Augustine however maintains that Paul truly reprehended Peter, lest it be wrong what he said earlier in this letter: In what I write to you, behold in the presence of God I am not lying: for holy men must not be so praised that holy Scripture would be undermined. As for instance, others say that Peter did not deny Christ, and in this they make the Savior a liar who said: You will deny me three times.

2:16 (III.39-44) SINCE A HUMAN BEING IS NOT JUSTIFIED BY WORKS OF THE LAW. I.e., by the Sabbath, and circumcision, and from other things which have been commanded not for the sake of justice, but for the purpose of subduing the harshness of the people. Or rather: NOT JUSTIFIED. Undoubtedly, this applies to the time of the New Testament. EXCEPT THROUGH FAITH IN JESUS CHRIST. For the patriarchs and the prophets were not justified by works of the law, but by faith.
2:17 (III.45-48) AND WE OURSELVES HAVE BEEN FOUND AS SINNERS. Since a human being is not justified by actual works of the law. IS CHRIST THEREFORE A MINISTER OF SIN? I.e., if he does not acquit those for whom he suffered, as if he is not able to forgive.

2:19 (III.49-54) FOR I AM DEAD TO THE LAW, THROUGH THE LAW. I died through the law of Christ to the law of the letter. Or rather: through the old law itself, I died to that law, because the law itself prophesied, that it would end. SO THAT I MIGHT LIVE FOR GOD. Who renewed his own law. I WAS CRUCIFIED WITH CHRIST. Because I died to all sins for which the law was given; therefore, the law is completely unnecessary for me.


2:21 (III.58-63) I SHALL NOT MAKE THE GRACE OF GOD INVALID. I.e., I ought not be ungrateful to him, who so greatly loved me, that he even died on my behalf. For grace is debased and invalid, if it alone does not suffice for me. Therefore one makes grace invalid, who after the gospel lives in the law, and who is stained with sins after baptism. So far was against Peter, now he redirects his sermon towards the Galatians.

3:1 (III.64-75) O FOOLISH GALATIANS etc. This is not contrary to the saying of the Savior, in which he forbade the brother to be called idiotic: because he corrects well in the manner of someone who loves, just as the Lord says: And you are without understanding, and of little faith. For it is the right of teachers to chide their erring disciples. WHO BEWITCHED YOU? Who has cast an evil eye upon you? For ‘fascinatio’ (a bewitching) is interpreted as ‘invidia’ (ill-will) in Greek. BEFORE WHOSE EYES HE WAS CONDEMNED TO DEATH. I.e., for whom through my preaching his passion was made known to such a degree, that he
himself received the verdict of damnation before you. HE WAS CRUCIFIED AMONG YOU. I.e., as though all this happened among you. Or rather thus: whom in truth you even now consider worthless because he was condemned and died, since you think that he is not sufficient for your salvation.

**3:2 (III.76-77) OR BY HEARING WITH FAITH?** For if you have received the Holy Spirit by merit of faith, what more will the law be able to give to you?

**3:3 (III.78-81) ARE YOU SO FOOLISH, etc.** It is very foolish to divert from the freedom of the New Testament and of grace into the slavery of the Old Testament. ARE YOU NOW PERFECTED BY THE FLESH? I.e., resorting to the carnal law.

**3:4 (III.82-88) HAVE YOU SUFFERED SO GREATLY WITHOUT CAUSE, IF ACTUALLY WITHOUT CAUSE?** The Galatians, believing in the crucified one, have suffered many torments and insults from the Jews and Gentiles. He says therefore: do you suffer so greatly without cause on behalf of Christ, if actually you do not improve again? Or rather: in this statement is an expression not of someone doubting, but rather of someone affirming, as is attested in the following statement: If nevertheless it is just according to God to repay those who confer tribulation upon you with tribulation.

**3:5 (III.89-91) HE WORKS MIRACLES.** He shows that the Galatians, by having accepted the Holy Spirit through faith, had the gifts of miracles, i.e., prophecy and speaking in tongues.

**3:6 (III.92-96) ABRAHAM BELIEVED.** He did not say that he worked through the law, but by faith alone he believed, that is, because he went from his own land into another land which he did not know; because he believed that Sarah at age ninety and sterile would give birth to what in Isaac would be called his seed, and because he sacrificed his own son.
3:8 (III.97-102) AND SCRIPTURE, FORESEEING. Not that black ink and parchment, which are without sensual perception, can know the future, but that the Holy Spirit and the sense, which hides in the letter, foretells the future. IN YOU. I.e., not in the law, but in you, i.e., in your faith, because you are the head of faith. ALL RACES SHALL BE BLESSED. Not the one Jewish race alone, but all races.

3:10 (III.103-107) THEY ARE UNDER A CURSE. Because the habit of sinning has grown so strong, that no one carries out the law anymore, just as the Apostle Peter says: What neither we nor our fathers have been able to bear. But if some just people were not cursed, they were saved not through works of the law, but by the grace of faith.

3:12 (III.108-110) BUT THE ONE WHO DOES THOSE THINGS. I.e., the commands of the law. HE WILL LIVE IN THEM. Namely, with a carnal life, because he is not a prisoner of death, since he fulfills the command of the law.

3:13 (III.111-136) CHRIST REDEEMED US etc. This is the difference between, ‘to buy’ and ‘to buy back’: that anyone who buys, buys something that does not belong to him; but whoever buys back, properly speaking, buys something which was his own and ceased to be his own.

CURSED IS EVERYONE WHO HANGS ON A TREE. Not cursed because he hangs, but rather he hangs because he is cursed. The one who denies that Christ died, denies that Christ is cursed. However, the one who confesses that he died and cannot deny that death is from sin, and that because of this death itself is actually called sin, let him hear the Apostle saying: Since our old self was crucified together with him, and let him understand whom Moses called cursed. For this reason, the Apostle says confidently about Christ: He was made a curse for us, just as he did not fear to say: He died for all, for that is, he died because he was cursed, because death itself is from a curse, and every sin is a curse, either the deed itself is a curse, so that punishment
follows, or even the punishment itself, that is called sin in a different sense because it happens as a consequence of sin. But ‘omnis’ (everyone) was added, so that it was said: Cursed is everyone who hangs on a tree, Moses certainly did not fail to foresee that just people too would hang on the cross, but he foresaw well that heretics would deny the true death of the Lord, wishing to separate Christ from this curse for this reason, that they might separate Christ from the reality of death. For if that was not a true death, then no curse hung on the cross when Christ was crucified, because he has not been truly crucified. ‘Omnis’ (everyone) was also added for this reason, lest Christ should be said not to relate to a true death, if by the foolish honor were separated from the curse which was linked to death.

3:14 (III.137-139) SO THAT WE WOULD RECEIVE THE PROMISE OF THE SPIRIT etc. Which was promised through Joel to all flesh, i.e., to the entire human race, namely: I will pour out my spirit over all flesh.

3:15 (III.140-153) BROTHERS, I SPEAK AFTER THE MANNER OF A HUMAN BEING. I.e., I use a human example. Or rather: ACCORDING TO A HUMAN BEING. For I grasp a more eminent and profound meaning in these promises, if I were to speak of it. Nevertheless I do not proclaim profound things, but that which a person can understand. NO ONE MAKES IT INVALID. As if he had said: if no one scorns the testament of a human, how much more the testament of God, i.e., the promise! As if he said: Although the law was given before the promise was implemented, nevertheless, the promise of Abraham was not fulfilled in that law, but the law was given only for this purpose, so that we might be nourished through it, until the promise arrived. The simple sense, however, which is in this place of the text, has such force, meaning that, the Apostle teaches that it is not possible to destroy through the law which was
given afterwards, promises, which were made to Abraham beforehand, and to judge later events in light of the earlier ones.

3:17 (III.154-174) DOES NOT MAKE IT INVALID. I.e., the law, which was given after such a great measure of time, cannot invalidate that testament that God confirmed to Abraham in Christ. FOR THE PURPOSE OF INVALIDATING THE PROMISE. I.e., so that the promise would not be fulfilled retrospectively after the law was given, as if the promise were fulfilled in the law. AFTER 430 YEARS etc. The habitation of the sons of Israel, where they remained in Egypt, lasted for 430 years, with those completed, the same day the whole army of the Lord walked out of the land of Egypt, as Scripture testifies in Exodus. Nevertheless the chroniclers calculate the sum of those years from the 75th year of Abraham’s birth, when he entered the land of the promise, following the edition of the Seventy Translators, which says: and the habitation of the sons of Israel, which they and their fathers inhabited in Egypt and in the land of Canaan lasted for 430 years. The truthful Hebrew version itself shows that it is necessary to follow the Septuagint edition, which tells that Caath the son of Levi, of whom it is certain that he was born in the land of Canaan, lived for 133 years, and his son Amram the father of Moses lived for 137 years, and Moses himself was 80 years old by the time of the exodus from Egypt, because it is certainly clear that the sum of these years cannot amount to 430. Even the Apostle however assented to the translation of these seventy, when he says: promises were uttered to Abraham etc.

3:18 (III.175-177) BUT TO ABRAHAM THROUGH THE PROMISE. I.e., not through the law, which was not yet, but through the promise, as in: in your seed all the tribes of the earth shall be blessed.

3:19 (III.178-189) WHAT THEREFORE IS THE LAW? IT WAS ESTABLISHED BECAUSE OF TRANSGRESSION. He asks himself the question arriving from the side: Why, therefore,
was the law given, since the promise is not in that, nor does it fulfill a promise, and no one is saved through it? To that he responds: The law was established because of transgression, and in the way of a pledge, until his seed came. Here however is a hyperbaton, in every respect confused. For this is the right sequence: The law was placed in the hand of a mediator on account of transgression, ordained through angels. ORDAINED THROUGH ANGELS. Because through angels the law was administered. IN THE HAND OF THE MEDIATOR.

Either: of Moses, as some think. “For also Moses”, they say, “was the mediator between God and the people.” Or rather: of Christ.

3:20 (III.190-192) BUT GOD. I.e., Christ. IS ONE. For this reason he added this, lest anyone think that Christ was divided from the unity of the divine nature, because he assumed the duty of mediator.

3:21 (III.193-195) IS THE LAW THEREFORE CONTRARY TO THE PROMISES? NO!

Because the law did not forbid the promises, which were predicted, from afterwards being fulfilled.

3:22 (VI.1-5) BUT SCRIPTURE INCLUDED. I.e., revealed. It exposed by revealing sins, because the old law had not removed the disease, but showed that all things were under sin, by saying: There is no one who does good etc. AS THE COUNTERPROMISE. I.e.: in your seed etc. BY FAITH. I.e., so that the ones who believe would be saved by faith alone.

3:23 (VI.6-8) WE WERE BEING GUARDED UNDER THE LAW. I.e., we were saved by the law for this faith, which had to be revealed in its own time. WHO WERE SHUT UP. I.e., by fear of the one God.

3:24 (VI.9-11) THUS THE LAW IS A DISCIPLINARY MASTER etc. More closely retaining us for instruction it was reserving the perfect teaching for the true teacher.
3:25 (VI.12-13) WE ARE NOT UNDER A DISCIPLINARY MASTER. For students of the perfect age are not in need of a disciplinary master.

3:26 (VI.14-21) FOR YOU ALL ARE SONS OF GOD etc. The significance of this is that the Gentiles should not despair, because they were not being guarded under the disciplinary master, and therefore they did not think of themselves as sons, but all become sons by putting on Christ through faith, not by birth, as there is only one who is also the wisdom of God, by the outstanding faithfulness of the mediator; this grace of faith he now calls a garment, so that they might be clothed with Christ, those who believed in Christ, and therefore have become sons of God and brothers of the mediator, in which faith there is no difference between Jew and Greek etc.

3:28 (VI.22-28) THERE IS NEITHER JEW NOR GREEK etc. For before not only between Jew and Greek, but even between tribe and tribe there was great diversity. But it must be noted, that in this passage he established three differences: namely of race, social condition, and gender.

FOR YOU ARE ALL ONE. If you all have become one body of Christ, you are the seed of Abraham, as true heirs having been produced not from carnal seed, but from divine promise.

4:1 (VII.1-7) MOREOVER I SAY, AS LONG AS [THE HEIR] IS A CHILD etc. A little son, i.e., a people on account of one faith pertaining to the one seed of Abraham, but they were partly under a disciplinary master on the Jewish side, and partly under the elements of this world, whom they served as under administrators, on the Gentile side. HE BY NO MEANS DIFFERS FROM A SLAVE. Because a son under the correction of instruction, just like a slave.

4:2 (VII.8-11) BUT UNDER GUARDIANS. Who guard the inheritance for the boy.
AND UNDER MANAGERS. Who urge him towards good habits. Likewise: UNDER TUTORS etc. I.e., angels or prophets by whose words they were daily being instructed anticipating the coming of the Savior.

4:3 (VII.12-15) UNDER THE ELEMENTS OF THIS WORLD. The Gentiles were enslaved to those as if they were gods until the arrival of Christ. Others say they are the law and sayings of the prophets, in which they were instructed as if in a certain alphabet.

4:4 (VII.16-18) BORN UNDER THE LAW. Because he was circumcised and a sacrifice was offered for him, because if he had not been born under the law, the Jews would not be able to believe in him.

4:5 (VII.19-22) AS THE ADOPTION OF SONS. For we are sons of God by the kindness and grace of his compassion. SO THAT WE MAY RECEIVE AGAIN. It is not ‘we may receive’, but ‘we may receive again’, so that it may indicate that we also lost this in Adam, through whom we are mortals.

4:6 (VII.23-25) CRYING. Urging us to cry. ABBA FATHER. It is a habit of Scripture that it juxtaposes a Hebrew word with an interpretation, as in Genesis, *mesech* born in slavery.

4:9 (VII.26-39) YOU ARE INDEED KNOWN BY GOD. Because you did not seek him, but he sought you again when you were lost: not because then God knew those, who were clearly foreknown before the creation of the world, but because then they themselves knew him through his gift, not through their own merit or ability. The Apostle preferred to speak figuratively, so that he said that they were then known by him, when he allowed himself to be known by them, and he preferred to correct his own words, when he said: but now that you have come to know God, as if he had said less correctly what he had said properly, and to say, or rather, you are known by him, instead of allowing them to claim that they were able to do for themselves, what
he had given them the ability to do. TO THE FEEBLE AND DESTITUTE ELEMENTS. What he now calls feeble and destitute, above he called the elements of the world. They are called feeble, moreover, because they can do nothing for those who adore them. To be sure, they are called destitute because they need divine guidance.

4:10 (VII.40-49) YOU OBSERVE DAYS etc. Certainly there are things that would be considered most trivial, were they not revealed in the Scriptures as more weighty than commonly assumed. For who would estimate how great a sin it is to observe days, months, years and times as those observe who on certain days or in certain months or years wish or do not wish to commence something, because according to vain doctrines of humans, they reckon either good or bad omened times, unless we measured the magnitude of this evil by the fear of the Apostle who said the following: I am fearful for you lest by chance I labored among you in vain? For I gained nothing by making you Christians, if you observe those dastardly things again.

4:12 (VII.50-56) BE AS I AM. I.e., quit your old ways, as I too quit them! Or: be imitators of me in everything. FOR I ALSO AM AS YOU ARE. I.e., I was erring sometime in the past. Or: I am human just like you. YOU HAVE NOT INJURED ME. I.e., so that you may rightly believe that I am stirred because of your enmities and not for the sake of your salvation. The student injures the teacher, if through his own negligence he ruins the precepts and efforts of the teacher.

4:13 (VII.57-61) YOU KNOW IT WAS BECAUSE OF A BODILY ILLNESS. Either through sufferings or through pain of the body. It is if he were saying: therefore I say that you did not harm me, because I was weak when I preached to you, and nevertheless you did not harm me even then, nor did you despise me, but you had compassion on me.
AND YOUR TRIAL etc. For they were tried when the Apostle suffered persecution, whether they forsook it, or they embraced it with love. And he says: And you did not despise me, by failing to undertake the fellowship of my danger: thus it is a grand temptation of a disciple, if a holy man is either weakened or harmed with impunity.

WHERE THEREFORE IS YOUR BLESSEDNESS? I.e., that which I was praising as among you in the beginning is no longer there. BECAUSE IF IT WERE POSSIBLE etc. This was said hyperbolically because of his superlative love.

PREACHING YOU THE TRUTH. Not everything true, but that they should not be circumcised.

THEY ARE ZEALOUS FOR YOU. I.e., they are envious of you, they who try to make you carnal beings from spiritual ones. NOT WELL. I.e., since they wish to seduce you.

SO THAT YOU MAY EMULATE THEM. I.e., so that you may be held under the yoke of the law.

PRESENTS. I.e., gifts. EMULATE. I.e., follow.

MY LITTLE CHILDREN, FOR WHOM I AM AGAIN ENDURING LABOR PAINS. I.e., through this letter. Because previously I endured labor pains for you when you were born through the gospel into the light of truth, but by entering into the old law and vain doctrines of human beings, you have lost the new life and image of Christ; but now I labor again for you, so that through penitence you might be reborn.

AND TO CHANGE MY VOICE. I.e., because it is more useful alive than dead. SINCE I AM TROUBLED ABOUT YOU. He is troubled because the sons have begun to become slaves.
4:22 (VII.88-94) SINCE ABRAHAM HAD TWO SONS etc. And the Apostle gave a rule from this text, for understanding the allegorical accounts, namely, so that with the truth of history remaining, we may expound the figures of the Old Testament. For when he had said that Abraham most truly had two wives, afterwards he showed what they foreshadowed. ONE. I.e., Ishmael. FROM THE MAID-SERVANT. I.e., from Hagar the Egyptian. AND ONE. I.e., Isaac. FROM THE FREE ONE. I.e., Sara.

4:23 (VII.95-101) ACCORDING TO THE FLESH. I.e., Ishmael was born according to intercourse, because Abraham, having fleshly desire in his youth, begot him from a youthful maid-servant, but Isaac through the promise; for the merit of the promise raised him from an old father and a sterile mother; and all this signifies something else as well, because the one who follows the letter, is a son from Hagar, but he who follows the spiritual meaning is a son of the free woman.

4:24 (VII.102-107) FOR THESE ARE THE TWO COVENANTS. The old law is represented through the maid-servant: the new law through the free woman; the sons of Hagar are the sons of the old law, which begets into slavery, but the sons of the free woman are understood as sons of the new covenant. BEGETTING INTO SLAVERY. The Jews were being forced like slaves out of fear even in the present time; but we are invited with rewards like free people.

4:25 (VII.108-124) FOR SINAI IS A MOUNTAIN etc. This he says, because just as Sinai and Jerusalem are adjoining (for the boundary of the tribe of Juda touches Mount Sinai, which is at the end of Arabia), thus both come together in the figure of Hagar, i.e., of the old covenant, Sinai clearly, where the law was given, and Jerusalem, where the law was guarded and fulfilled. SERVING. I.e., the earthly Jerusalem. WITH HIS OWN SONS. I.e., with the Jews.

---

392 The phrase *secundum usum carnalem* (lit. “according to bodily practice”) is referring to not only the natural physical process of conceiving in this world, but also suggests the pejorative sense of *carnalem*, i.e., in sin – which is teased out by Sedulius in the ensuing phrase.
Likewise, according to Ambrose, the comparison of Hagar with the old covenant is appropriate, because she was put in that place which belongs to that race, from which also Hagar came. For Hagar was Egyptian, and nevertheless had been from Arabia, since not a modest part of Egypt was confined in Arabia. For he says: *It is neighboring to that, which now is Jerusalem*, is said concerning Hagar, since that Jerusalem which is among us, i.e., which seems to be in this world, is equivalent to Hagar. Sara however indicates the heavenly Jerusalem. And he says: *And she serves with her own sons*, he says not concerning Hagar, but he applies it to the covenant, which was given on Sinai.

4:26 (VII.125-136) BUT JERUSALEM, WHICH IS ABOVE. I.e., which Sara prefigured with her son, i.e., the spiritual Church, who is the mother, both of the Gentile believers, and also of the Jews, whose sons cannot be slaves. And he adds well: “above”, because the church of Christ in its hope and lifestyle is elevated by a heavenly desire, as: “*Our citizenship is in the heavens.*” The four figures, i.e., history, allegory, tropology and anagogy, are indicated by this name alone which is Jerusalem. For according to history Jerusalem is a city of the Jews; according to allegory it is the Church of Christ; according to anagogy it is the heavenly city of God, who is the mother of us all; according to tropology it is the human soul, which is frequently either rebuked or praised by this name by the Lord.

4:27 (VII.137-147) REJOICE, O STERILE WOMAN. This was written in Isaiah. This however is compared either to the Church of the Gentiles or to the heavenly Jerusalem. For both were sterile, the Gentiles’ church, because it produced for God no spiritual sons through baptism; and also the heavenly Jerusalem, left by the apostate angels, and void of human beings, remained

---

393 The verse Sedulius here references is Philippians 3:20, but either his text reads *conversatio* (lit. “life-style” but here rendered as “citizenship”), or he has substituted *conversatio for municipatus* (“citizenship”), which is used in the Vulgate and is a closer rendering of the original Greek, to theologically link Gal 4:27 with Philippians 3:20. The modern division/dichotomy between “life-style” and “citizenship” may not have been so strong in Sedulius’ monastic environs where the two are more synonymous.
sterile till the arrival of the Savior. YOU WHO DO NOT PRODUCE. Instead of: were not producing. BREAK OUT. In rejoicing. AND SHOUT. I.e., rejoice in the trumpet of learning, or in a cry of joy. OF THE DESOLATE. I.e., of the Church. THAN SHE. I.e., of the synagogue, or earthly Jerusalem. WHO HAS A HUSBAND. I.e., the word of the law.

4:29 (VII.148-156) HE WAS PERSECUTING HIM. I.e., Isaac. This was indeed written in Genesis, because Ishmael jested with Isaac. But the Apostle shows that it was not an innocent jest, which he refers to as a persecution. Hence it is understood, that he was desiring to make him scurrilous and slight just as he was himself, lest he could be preferred to him in the inheritance. For that same reason Abraham is ordered to listen to the voice of Sara concerning his ejection. ACCORDING TO THE SPIRIT. I.e., according to the promise and power of the Spirit. SO IT IS NOW ALSO. I.e., thus also these strive at making you slaves similar to themselves.

4:30 (VII.157-159) FOR HE WILL NEVER BE AN HEIR etc. Thus the sons of circumcision, the infidels and the heretics, will not be heirs with the sons of the grace of the New Testament.

5:1 (VIII.1) STAND. I.e., in faith of the Gospel.

5:2 (VIII.2-3) CHRIST WILL PROFIT YOU NOTHING. If you do not think that that he alone is sufficient for your salvation.

5:3 (VIII.4-6) SINCE HE IS A DEBTOR OF THE ENTIRE LAW. Who receives the essence of the works of the law, i.e., circumcision, it is necessary that he sustains the other members lest he be subject to condemnation.

5:5 (VIII.7-8) FOR WE IN THE SPIRIT. I.e., by spiritual grace and life-style, not by the letter of the law.
5:6 (VIII.9-10) NEITHER UNCIRCUMCISION. I.e., lest someone think that *uncircumcision* alone suffices with *circumcision* voided.

5:7 (VIII.11) YOU WERE RUSHING. I.e., in steps of faith.

5:8 (VIII.12-15) YOUR PERSUASION IS NOT FROM HIM. *This persuasion*, which you now follow, is *not from him who* in the beginning *called you*, but is from these who have since been *confusing you*, not as it is poorly recorded in the Latin codices, *your persuasion is from God*.

5:9 (VIII.16-23) A LITTLE YEAST etc. Lest anyone say: ‘Why do you reproach all, when they have not all erred?’ He shows that a little yeast of an error can *corrupt the whole loaf* of the Church. A little sparkle consumes walls, cities, and the most extensive woods and regions. The mange of one member of the herd stains the whole flock. Thus the perverse doctrine going forth from one individual, enters many hearers.

*Fermentat*: “Leavens”, not, as is written poorly in the Latin codices: *corrumpit*, “it corrupts”.

5:10 (VIII.24-27) I HAVE CONFIDENCE IN THE LORD CONCERNING YOU. Not through conjecture, but by means of a prophetic spirit he proclaims, that the Galatians are about to return to the way of the truth. *You will think nothing else*. I.e., except for that which I teach through the letter.

5:11 (VIII.28-33) IF I PREACH CIRCUMCISION etc. For this reason he says this, because certain people among them were saying that Paul heeded to *circumcision*, since he *circumcised Timothy*. THEREFORE THE SCANDAL OF THE CROSS HAS BEEN MADE VOID. I.e., the *scandal* which I suffer on account of my proclamation of the *cross was made void, if I do not preach the cross*, but *circumcision*.

5:12 (VIII.34-38) I WISH THAT THEY MIGHT BE CASTRATED. I.e., *would* that they be changed from evil into good! Or: that they may rather be castrated from their whole genitalia,
who proclaim that a modest portion of their body is to be circumcised! Alternatively: Would that such ones would entirely be divided from you by some punishment, lest they further confuse you.

5:13 (VIII.39-55) FOR YOU HAVE BEEN CALLED INTO LIBERTY etc. This statement can be better explained thus, as though the one body is mutually embracing itself and is not discordant. *Brothers, you have been called away from the slavery of the law into the liberty of the gospel.* In truth, I implore you, not to take advantage of liberty as if it were licentiousness, and surrender to the flesh and luxury. Why do you not rather learn, that such a liberty is a greater slavery, so that *mutually to each other through love,* you may now administer the obedience that previously the Law extracted from people against their will. And you, *brothers,* therefore ought to live according to the spiritual law, and so that you do *not bring about the desires of the flesh.* For flesh fears cold, and is diminished by hunger and sleeplessness etc. On the contrary, the spirit desires what is hostile to the flesh. Hence it follows, for this reason not that you think you are free because nature did not immediately cease, although the law does not command it, but [you think you are free] because you ceased to be under the *servitude* of the law. For we have not been *called* from *slavery* into *freedom* in such a way that we may *serve the flesh.* BUT THROUGH THE LOVE OF THE SPIRIT SERVE. I.e., I am not insinuating arrogance under the appearance of *liberty,* but I wish there to be spontaneous *service.*

5:15 (VIII.56-58) BUT IF YOU BITE. I.e., returning an *eye for an eye,* or blasphemy etc.

LEST YOU BE CONSUMED BY EACH OTHER. I.e., lest anyone becomes the cause of death to anyone.

5:16 (VIII.59-60) WALK IN THE SPIRIT. I.e., in spiritual *desires* and *works.*
5:17 (VIII.61-71) FOR THE FLESH DESIRES etc. Not because flesh desires without a soul, but the soul itself, when it considers carnal things, is called flesh: but when the spirit considers spiritual things, the spirit becomes one with God. Likewise, THE FLESH DESIRES AGAINST THE SPIRIT. This is a carnal understanding of Scripture contrary to spiritual allegory. In this statement we must not interpret flesh as human being, i.e., not as a human substance, but as the will of the flesh and the worst desires, just as we ought to define the spirit not as some substance, but as good and spiritual desires of the soul, the same thing which the Apostle clearly expressed previously, beginning as follows: I say, however, walk in the spirit, and you will not act out the desires of the flesh.

5:18 (VIII.72-73) BUT IF YOU WILL BE LEAD BY THE SPIRIT. I.e., in spiritual desire, or by the Holy Spirit.

5:19 (VIII.74-82) NOW IT IS OBVIOUS [WHAT] THE WORKS OF THE FLESH ARE. They are obvious only to those, who believe in Christ. Of course, most of the Gentiles are glorying in their own disgraces. Here works of the flesh seem to me to refer rather to a simple, straightforward understanding of flesh and spirit than to the flesh of the law and to the little children in Christ. ADULTERY. It is read superfluously in the Latin codices, adulterium (adultery). FORNICATION. Averting from lawful intercourse. IMPURITY. As males acting shamefully with males. EXTRAVAGANCE. Which is divided into two aspects, into gluttony and fornication.

5:20 (VIII.83-89) ANGER. The difference between resentment and anger is that the resentful is always angered, the angry is only temporarily provoked. It must be asked why he calls these works of the flesh when many of these, actually, are works of the soul, like anger and other similar things. Thus when flesh, i.e., carnal desire, reigns, then also the works of the soul are
counted among it, when, however, the spirit rules, if the flesh does any good works, and therefore they are counted among the fruits of the spirit.

5:21 (VIII.90) JUST AS I PREDICTED. I.e., when I was present among you.

5:22 (VIII.91-95) BUT THE FRUIT OF THE SPIRIT IS LOVE. The mother ought to be numbered in the first place. REJOICING. I.e., spiritually. PEACE. Even with those hating peace. PATIENCE. Patiently sustain many injustices. KINDNESS. Always be mindful to act kindly. GOODNESS. Do good to all.

5:23 (VIII.96-100) MODESTY. Inflict injury upon no one. GENTleness. Do not get angry when you are hurt. RESTRAINT. In food and intercourse. CHASTITY. Virginity of body and mind. AGAINST THE THINGS OF SUCH KIND. I.e., virtues. THERE IS NO LAW. For that law does not prohibit, but those who are able to do such things are above the law.

5:24 (VIII.101-104) WHO ARE OF CHRIST etc. If all vices are crucified at once, and if the flesh, as it were, hanging on the cross does not covet, to what purpose then is the law necessary for us, which was given for the purpose of confining vices?

5:25 (VIII.105-109) AND IF WE LIVE BY THE SPIRIT. I.e., if through the spirit we have life, we should act spiritually, and should not carnally serve the law! A person desires vain glory, who tries to void any true doctrine of someone else. PROVOKING. Instigating others into anger.

6:1 (VIII.110-119) BROTHERS, EVEN IF A PERSON HAS BEEN PREOCCUPIED WITH SOMETHING ELSE. He says this to them, who have not been led astray, that they correct with mildness the ones who hinder. EXAMINING YOURSELF etc. Here Paul is criticized by others, because he placed a singular after a plural; but nonetheless a Jew, most learned in his own language, could not express the profound meanings in a foreign language, nor was he well
disposed concerning words, although he had a general understanding.  LEST ALSO YOU BE TEMPTED. Since also you yourself, because you are a human being, can be prevented in something and require help, just as the healthy sustain the sick and the living bury the dead, because they believe that they themselves can be sick and die.

6:2 (VIII.120-122) BEAR YOUR BURDENS MUTUALLY. I.e., by having compassion for sinners. THE LAW OF CHRIST. The law of Christ is love, as it is written: A new commandment I give to you.

6:3 (VIII.123-126) FOR IF ANYONE JUDGES etc. I.e., Who think that they themselves cannot be tempted. Or rather: who trusts oneself more than one’s own conscience by praising oneself. WHEN HE IS NOTHING. I.e., because he is arrogant.

6:4 (VIII.127-130) HE SHOULD TEST. I.e., he should examine by evidence of his conscience. IN HIMSELF. I.e., in his own conscience. GLORY. Of retribution. AND NOT IN ANOTHER. I.e., not in flattery of another. For the good of another does not assist him, nor does the evil of another corrupt him.

6:5 (VIII.131-132) HE WILL BEAR HIS OWN BURDEN. I.e., the one who will have deserved punishment, will sustain it, thus also he who will have deserved a reward.

6:6 (XI.1-4) MOREOVER, LET THE ONE WHO IS TAUGHT, SHARE etc. Above Paul had taught the spiritual ones to instruct in the spirit of gentleness; now he orders the weaker ones, that they themselves just as they reap the spiritual things from their teachers, likewise they should furnish material things to their teachers.

6:7 (XI.5-7) Do not desire to do wrong. But if anyone should say: I do not have from which I may share with my teacher. GOD IS NOT MOCKED. He himself knows whether or not you have.
6:8 (XI.8-15) FOR WHAT SOMEONE SOWS etc. He confirms them to consideration of these things which they do not see, through those things which they do see. IN THEIR (OWN) FLESH. I.e., in their carnal desires. Or alternatively: IN THEIR (OWN) FLESH. I.e., in the greed of the flesh by not sharing with their teacher. HE WILL REAP CONCERNING THE FLESH. Concerning greed itself. CORRUPTION. I.e., the disappearance of riches. IN SPIRIT. I.e., in spiritual desires, or in spiritual bounty. ONE WILL REAP LIFE. I.e., the recompensation of bounty.

6:9 (XI.16-18) THAT WE MAY NOT BE LACKING. For unfailing favor ensues unfailing justice: for whoever perseveres unto the end.

6:10 (XI.19-20) TO THE HOUSEHOLD OF FAITH. He called the aforementioned teachers the household of faith.

6:11 (XI.21-24) YOU SEE WITH WHAT KIND OF LETTERS etc. Understand whether those letters approve carnal circumcision or not. From this place until the end he wrote with his own hand, indicating that everything before had been transcribed by someone else.

6:12 (XI.25-27) WHOEVER WISHES TO PLEASE. I.e., whoever desires to please Jewish flesh. IN THE FLESH. I.e., in the letter of the flesh. SO THAT THEY MIGHT NOT SUFFER. Namely, from the Jews.

6:13 (XI.28-30) SO THAT THEY MAY GLORY IN YOUR FLESH. I.e., so that they may have praise among the Jews concerning your circumcised flesh. Or rather: Because they attracted disciples to themselves.

6:14 (XI.31-36) EXCEPT IN THE CROSS etc. I.e., I will not glorify in your flesh, not in my teaching, but in the faith of the cross, through which all my sins were forgiven, so that I die to the world and the world to me. THE WORLD HAS BEEN CRUCIFIED. I.e., so that it may not
hold me. AND I TO THE WORLD. So that I may not hold it as if it were dead, nor that I may covet.

6:15 (XI.37-38) BUT A NEW CREATURE. I.e., if anyone is reborn in Christ he experiences a new way of life.

6:17 (XI.39-43) LET NO ONE TROUBLE ME ABOUT THE REST. I.e., let no one resist me by asking, ‘Why do you say this?’ FOR I HAVE STIGMATA. I.e., the signs and marks, not of circumcision, but of the cross and of the suffering of the Lord I bear on my body, as thrice I have been beaten with sticks, etc.
On the Letter to the Ephesians

Scripture reports, as Jerome testifies, that Paul preached for three years in Ephesus. This one, however, among all the letters of Paul, assuredly has been wrapped perhaps to the greatest degree with words and meaning.

1:1 (1.1-11) PAUL AN APOSTLE OF JESUS CHRIST THROUGH THE WILL. I.e., by the will of God the Father; therefore, through the will of God, not by my merits. TO THE HOLY ONES. I.e., not to all the Ephesians, but to those who believe in Christ. AND TO THE FAITHFUL ONES. All the holy faithful ones, not all the faithful holy ones, because even catechumens can be called faithful because of the fact that they believe in Christ; nevertheless, they are not holy, because they are not sanctified through baptism. Not only therefore for the holy ones, but even for the faithful ones, who have not as yet been sanctified, Paul much desires the grace of Christ. WHO ARE IN CHRIST JESUS. There are more faithful ones, but not in Christ, for instance, if someone faithfully returns a deposit. Therefore he added in order to differentiate: In Christ Jesus.

1:2 (1.12-18) GRACE TO YOU AND PEACE. Grace and peace, either both must be referred as much to the Father as to the Lord Jesus, or they must be referred to each individually, so that grace refers to God the Father, but peace to Christ, accordingly there follows: to the praise of the glory of grace, in which he made us acceptable in the beloved, so that it is the grace of the Father, because he deemed it a worthy matter to send his Son for our salvation, but that it is the peace of the Son, because of the fact that we have been reconciled through him to the Father, with the dividing wall having been destroyed.

1:3 (1.19-32) BLESSED BE THE GOD. I.e. because he makes us blessed. He praises God, which he gave as written below. AND THE FATHER [OF OUR] LORD etc. I.e., who is also
the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, or blessed is the God of that man who was taken up, and is the Father of him, who in the beginning was with God etc. WHO BLESSED US WITH EVERY SPIRITUAL BLESSING. I.e., with all abundance and grace. Not with one, but with all blessings, not that we all obtain everything, but, since we each have one or many, we possess all through each. IN THE HEAVENS. I.e., God himself, who is in the heavens. Alternatively: Not in carnal prosperity nor in earthly abundance, but in heavenly gifts and virtues He blessed us. IN CHRIST JESUS. For in the head he blessed all members.

1:4 (I.33-47) JUST AS HE CHOSE US. I.e., thus he blessed us, just as he chose us. BEFORE THE CREATION OF THE WORLD. For whom everything that will happen has already happened through foreknowledge. SO THAT WE WOULD BE HOLY AND UNSTAINED IN HIS PRESENCE. I.e., not in hypocrisy before people. It must be asked why he says this, since Scripture says: Not everyone living will be justified in your sight,394 namely, in the present life. Besides: he chose us for that purpose, so that we might be holy and unstained in the future life, when the Church of Christ will have neither stain nor wrinkle, although even in the present life the just can be called holy and unstained, even if not completely, nevertheless not unsuitably in part.395 There is the following difference between ‘holy’ and ‘unstained’: holy can be understood also as unstained, but unstained not necessarily as holy. Certainly, the little children are unstained, who are corporally pure, and nevertheless not holy, because holiness is obtained by will and zeal.

1:5 (I.48-51) INTO THE ADOPTION OF SONS. For the Savior is God’s son by nature, but we are by adoption. INTO HIMSELF. I.e., Christ, so that we may be his members. ACCORDING TO THE PURPOSE OF HIS WILL. I.e., not according to our merit.

394 More clearly translated, albeit loosely: “No one living is justified in your sight.”
395 *1 Corinthians 13:9-12.
1:6 (1.52-56) INTO THE PRAISE OF THE GLORY. I.e., so that we might praise the glory of his grace. WHICH HE FREELY BESTOWED ON US. For which he made us pleasing to himself. IN THE BELOVED. ‘By all’ is understood; for Christ is loved even by the impious. For since Christ is wisdom, truth, peace and joy, who should not love these things even if he is most impious?

1:7 (1.57-58) ACCORDING TO THE RICHNESS OF THE SPLENDOR OF HIS GRACE. I.e., as: With him is abundant redemption.

1:8 (1.59-64) WHICH HE MADE OVERFLOW IN US EXCESSIVELY. I.e., more than made overflow, so that he did not only redeem us from death and cast away our sins gratuitously, but also gave such great wisdom to us that we might know the secret mysteries of his will. IN ALL WISDOM. Of visible and invisible things. AND KNOWLEDGE. Only of visible things. Nevertheless, all knowledge and wisdom are not in us, but in God.

1:9 (1.65-72) THE MYSTERY OF HIS WILL. I.e., our redemption through his blood, but God in all his wisdom accomplished this. WHICH HE PURPOSED IN HIM etc. There is the following difference between ‘purpose’ and ‘predestination’: ‘predestination’ is the prefiguration of some matter a long time beforehand in the mind of that person, who destines what will be in the future, but ‘purpose’ is when design is near and the effect follows the thought closely. Likewise: ‘Predestination’ is the preparation of grace, but grace is the gift itself.

1:10 (1.73-88) IN THE DISPENSATION OF THE FULLNESS OF TIMES. I.e., after the fullness of times had come, when already all dispensation of the times of the law and nature and the prophets was brought to an end. TO RENEW ALL THINGS IN CHRIST. Instead of ‘to sum up’ in one Latin codex was written ‘to rebuild’. Thus the meaning in the present place is the following: All dispensation, which was before the world and which afterwards began to be in the
world, as much of invisible as of visible creatures, promised the coming of the Lord. Thus all mysteries and all dispensation of ancient times, pertaining not only to those things which are on earth but even to those things which are in the heavens, have been fulfilled in the passion of Christ by a brief recapitulation, for instance, just as Isaac who was offered as a sacrifice prefigures the Savior, or as Abel who was slain by Cain, etc. Those things which are in the heavens are renewed, when that, which was lost in the angels, is restored from humans. But those things that are on earth are renewed, when those humans who have been predestined to eternal life are restored from the corruption of the previous age.

1:11 (I.89–91) IN WHOM BY LOT. I.e., by gratuitous grace. WE HAVE BEEN CALLED. I.e., we, who out of the Jews believe in Christ. PREDESTINED. I.e., prepared.

1:12 (I.92-94) WE WHO HOPED FIRST. We, the Apostles or Jews, who prior to the Gentiles believed in Christ. Or rather: we expected Christ out of the law.

1:13 (I.95-104) IN WHOM YOU ALSO, YOU MOST BELOVED etc. In whom also to you Gentiles salvation has been announced. Till now he addresses especially the Jews that were in Ephesus, about the mystery of the incarnation of Christ, and then the Gentiles, so that they may be thankful for the benefits of God. YOU HAVE BEEN SEALED etc. Where the image, which was destroyed, has been repaired. The first human was made to the image and likeness of God, the second receives in the second rebirth, when he has received the Holy Spirit, the form of the creator. WITH THE SPIRIT OF THE PROMISE. The spirit that was promised to all flesh through the prophet Joel, as: I will pour out from my Spirit over all flesh. 396

1:14 (I.105-107) INTO REDEMPTION OF POSSESSION. That is a reference to those people that he acquired by redeeming them through his own blood, so that also in this we may praise his glory, which does not profit God, but those who praise him.

1:16 (II.1-5) I DO NOT CEASE GIVING THANKS. *I do not cease giving* and “making” *thanks* appears by means of a solecism instead of ‘*I do not cease to give* and make *thanks*’. It must be noted that he begs wisdom from God for those who have faith and love; for he knew that wisdom was the helper of all virtues.

1:17 (II.6-16) THE FATHER OF GLORY. I.e., according to divinity. For Christ is the *glory* of the *Father* just as he is also his *wisdom*, etc. THE GOD OF OUR LORD. I.e. according to flesh. AND OF REVELATION. I.e., as: *once your face has been revealed, you may gaze upon the glory of the Lord.*\(^{397}\) IN RECOGNITION OF HIM. I.e., so that you may perfectly know his *greatness* and *power*, by which he can fulfill the promised awards and punishments. *Greatness* is that quality through which, because he is everywhere, absolutely nothing can be hidden from him. For who has understood this for certain, will not be able to sin in any category. For the one who feels ashamed before human testimony against him, will all the more be able to revere the divine. Whence also John the Apostle confirms that *everyone who sins does not know God.*

1:18 (II.17-23) THE EYES OF THE HEART. I.e., not of the body. For the promised *spiritual* things are not perceived except with *spiritual eyes*. SO THAT YOU MAY KNOW WHAT IS THE HOPE OF VOCATION. For if you knew to how much hope you have been called, you shall easily despise all the hope of this world, and if you saw the riches of the inheritance of God, all earthly inheritance will be horror to you. For no one hoping for a kingdom with his own riches is worthy to possess mediocre substance.

1:20 (II.24-27) AND ESTABLISHING AT HIS RIGHT HAND. Not because the Father sets a throne and sits in it and has the Son at his right hand, but because through human likeness he demonstrates divine power.

\(^{397}\) 2 Cor 3:18.
1:21 (II.28-48) OVER ALL RULE AND AUTHORITY AND POWER AND DOMINION etc.

Now, we know nine orders of angels: Angels, Archangels, Powers, Authorities, Principalities, Dominions, Thrones, Cherubim, and Seraphim. Those who announce the smallest matters, are called Angels, those who announce the most important things, Archangels. Powers are those through whom signs and miracles happen. Authorities, i.e., over adverse powers, are those through whose authority opposite powers are restrained, lest they tempt the hearts of humans as much as they wish. Rules are those who even also command over the good spirits of angels. Dominions are those who transcend with great difference both Rules and Authorities, to whom the other hosts have been subjected in obedience. Thrones are those who are filled with such great grace of divinity, that the Lord sits on them and discerns his own judgments through them. There are also Hiruphin,\(^{398}\) i.e., the fullness of knowledge, who are fulfilled by so much more perfect knowledge, the closer they behold the splendor of God. Seraphim, however, i.e., the ones who burn or shine, are those who burn all the more with love for their maker, the more closely they see him; no other spirits intercede between them and God. AND HE GAVE A NAME TO HIM. I.e., Son. WHICH IS ABOVE EVERY OTHER NAME. Thus: You have magnified your holy one over every other name.

1:22 (II.49-59) AND HE SUBJECTED ALL THINGS UNDER FEET OF HIM. I.e., under the dominion of his humanity. Or: it seems to be contradictory to what he says elsewhere: We do not yet see all things subjected to him etc. Either therefore he calls to mind according to foreknowledge that which is future as if it had already happened – according to that sentence which we previously explained: Who blessed us in every spiritual blessing in the heavens, or certainly, if it must be understood as concerning the past, we must understand it thus, that even those things which are not subjected to him by will serve him by condition of nature, for

\(^{398}\) Maybe a little footnote here to explain that this is an alternative spelling for ‘cherubim’.
instance, demons, Jews, Gentiles. So understand: And he gave the head. OVER ALL THE CHURCH. I.e., no only of humans, but also of angels.

1:23 (II.60-66) WHO IS FULFILLED THROUGH ALL IN ALL. For when all have believed, then his body will be perfected in all members; for he is entirely fulfilled in all members, not in individual ones, lest there be any difference among the members. Or alternatively: All, i.e., gifts in all, because individual or multiple gifts are in individuals through parts. For in one God is justice, in another chastity, in a third he is moderation, so etc.

2:1 (III.1-6) AND WHEN YOU WERE DEAD. He begins to unfold the collective benefits, so that they may be more zealously impelled towards their duty of the commandments because they contemplate the lenience they have received as a gift. PARAPTOPHATA (“blunders”) i.e., transgressions are, as it were, the beginnings of sins, when silent thought creeps along, but AMARTIA (“faults”), i.e. sins are when what has been completed by action comes to an end.

2:2 (III.7-9) ACCORDING TO THE PRINCE. I.e., the devil. Many conjecture reasonably that the devil has divided power in this air among his followers for beguiling humans with various sins.

2:3 (III.10-15) AND OF THOUGHTS. In Greek, of minds, because it pertains to teachings that are contrary to the truth. AND WE WERE BY NATURE SONS. I.e., because since adolescence the mind of humans has been bent towards malice. For there is no human that does not sin. SONS OF WRATH. Either they are sons of perdition, or of the devil, who is called wrath on account of that savagery which he exercises against humans.

2:4 (III.1-3) GOD HOWEVER. The ‘However’ is empty. ON ACCOUNT OF MUCH LOVE. It is excessive love to love rebellious slaves as if sons.
2:5 (III.4-6) HE MADE US ALIVE TOGETHER. Instead of ‘He will make us alive together’. I.e., by forgiving and purging our sins in justice through baptism and faith.

2:6 (III.7-9) AND HE CORESURRECTED. Because what has preceded in the head is certain to happen at some point in the future in the members. AND LIKewise MADE. Instead of ‘will make’.

2:7 (III.10-13) ABUNDANT RICHES. I.e., what he is about to give, which no eye has seen and no ear has heard, etc. Truly abundant is a grace that forgave not only sins, but will even join the resurrected ones with Christ at the right hand of God in the heavens.

2:8 (V.1-3) THROUGH FAITH. I.e., not through works. But lest they claim at least faith itself for themselves, he followed this up and added: And this is not from you, since faith itself is not from you, but from him who called you.

2:9 (V.4-5) LEST ANYONE BOASTS. I.e., to have been saved by his own merits and not by God.

2:10 (V.6) CREATED IN CHRIST. I.e., reborn through baptism.

2:11 (VI.1-6) THEREFORE BE MINDFUL etc. He reminds those from what most humble origin they have been led towards the highest dignity of kingship, so that they are not ungrateful for the kindnesses of the benefactor. WHICH IS CALLED CIRCUMCISION. I.e., not by truth but by name. IN THE FLESH. I.e., not in the spirit. DONE BY HAND. I.e., done by a human hand, not by the Spirit of God in the heart.

2:12 (VI.7-11) ESTRANGED FROM THE COMMUNITY OF ISRAEL. I.e., who were then the people of God. AND FOREIGNERS etc. Even if you were believing in part, nevertheless you were still being considered as proselytes, i.e., newcomers. WANDERING WITHOUT GOD IN THIS WORLD. You, worshipping many false gods, have abandoned the one true God.
2:13 (VII.1-4) YOU WERE FAR AWAY. Although God is everywhere present, he is nevertheless said to be far away from the impious. YOU HAVE BEEN MADE NEAR. I.e., so that you may be equal to the Jews, who were with God. IN THE BLOOD OF CHRIST. I.e., by believing you were freed by his blood and passion.

2:14 (VII.5-13) FOR HE HIMSELF IS OUR PEACE. He himself is the reconciliation of both peoples mutually to each other and to God. AND THE DIVIDING WALL OF A BARRIER. A dividing wall, a fence, and a barrier were the burdens of the law, dividing the two peoples, and therefore they are called the very wall of enmity. REMOVING ENMITY. I.e., circumcision et cetera, which not so much the will of God rather than either the reasoning of the time or the harshness of the people necessitated. Alternatively: REMOVING ENMITY. I.e., the wisdom of the flesh, which is hostile towards God. IN HIS OWN FLESH. I.e., by the passion of his own flesh.

2:15 (VII.14-32) THE LAW OF THE COMMANDMENTS. I.e., in which are the commandments of circumcision, the keeping of the Sabbath, and the celebration of the new moons etc. IN DECREES. I.e., MAKING THEM VOID in the teachings of the gospel. Likewise: HE HIMSELF IS OUR PEACE WHO MADE THE TWO INTO ONE. For the rest, the entire understanding of these words must be transferred to the angels and the powers of the heavens and to human souls, because in his own blood he has joined earthly and heavenly things, which before were at variance with each other, and as a good shepherd carrying the diseased sheep back to the mountains has made it to be with the others. And thus the cross of the Lord benefited not only the earthly, but also the heavenly things. Likewise in the exposition of Habakkuk: For he himself broke down the dividing wall etc. I.e., he revealed the obscurity of the ancient prophets and all the mysteries of the old law. But that he says, so that in himself he
might make the two into one new human, seems to agree more with the previous sense referring to Jews and Gentiles. Thus understand that the human person, made according to the image and likeness of God, is about to receive that same form through reconciliation, which the angels have even already now and he himself destroyed, but as a new human, who is daily renewed and is about to live in a new world. Alternatively: IN ONE NEW HUMAN. I.e., having been made into one Christian nation.

2:18 (VII.33-35) IN ONE SPIRIT. He beautifully names the three persons in the access of the two nations, i.e., of the whole Christian nation of humankind.

2:19 (VIII.1-8) THEREFORE, NO LONGER ARE YOU STRANGERS. To that which he had said first: Strangers to the covenants of God, he now responds. BUT YOU ARE CITIZENS. He had said first: Estranged from the community of Israel. This verse is presumably most effective against those who endeavor to introduce diverse natures. For how have foreigners been made citizens of saints and how were the members of God’s household once estranged from the community of Israel, if nature cannot be changed into better or into worse?

2:20 (VIII.9-17) ON THE FOUNDATION OF THE APOSTLES. The Apostles are the foundation, and Christ is the foundation of the Apostles. Christ is the foundation, who is also called the corner stone, joining and holding two walls. For that reason, moreover, is the foundation even the most important stone, because on it the church is both founded and perfected. But the most important is the corner stone, which holds both nations, or, according to the second interpretation, joins both heavenly and earthly things. Christ is a stone cut off from the mountain, rejected by the Pharisees who construct the law.

2:21 (VIII.18-23) INTO A HOLY TEMPLE IN THE LORD. Stones that are not holy cannot be placed in a holy temple. By way of a comparison with the temple of Jerusalem he says that the
body of Christ, i.e., the church, has been built up, so that truth may have a much greater purity and holiness than the image. In the Apostle, one must search more for the order of the meanings than of the words.

3:1 (VIII.1-5) FOR THE SAKE OF THIS MATTER. I.e., of this matter which I mentioned earlier, that the Son of God saved both Gentiles and Jews and made both into one. I, PAUL. I.e., I know the mystery, or I have taught it. THE PRISONER OF CHRIST. I.e., out of love for Christ chained in Rome.

3:2 (VIII.6-7) IF NEVERTHELESS YOU HAVE HEARD. If nevertheless you firmly keep in mind that I have accepted the dispensation of teaching among you.

3:3 (VIII.8-11) THE MYSTERY HAS BEEN MADE KNOWN TO ME. I.e., that Jews and Gentiles have become one nation in Christ. JUST AS I WROTE ABOVE. In the earlier part of this letter, when he said: So that he made known to us the mystery of his own will.

3:4 (VIII.12-14) JUST AS [I WROTE BEFORE] IN BRIEF… YOU CAN etc. Not how much I was able to write, but how much you were able to comprehend. IN THE MYSTERY OF CHRIST. Not in secular eloquence.

3:5 (VIII.15-23) IT IS NOT KNOWN TO THE SONS OF HUMAN BEINGS. Markedly and cautiously he says that the mystery was hidden from the sons of human beings, not, however, to the sons of God, i.e., to the patriarchs and prophets, concerning whom he says: I said you are gods etc. Alternatively: The prophets did not know it in the way in which it was revealed to the Apostles. For it is one thing to know in the Spirit the things that are about to come, and another thing to perceive those things completed in the action. Whence also John is said to be greater than all the prophets, because he himself saw him, whom the others prophesied, and pointed at him with his finger saying: Behold the lamb of God etc.
3:6 (VIII.24-31) THAT IN THE SPIRIT THE GENTILES ARE FELLOW HEIRS. *It was revealed* to me *through the Spirit*. Or rather: That they are associates *in the Spirit*, not by the circumcision of flesh. FELLOW HEIRS. I.e., with Israel, or which is better, with Christ, so that God may be our inheritance and Christ our fellow heir. AND FELLOW BODY MEMBERS. I.e., of one body, not only *fellow heirs*, because they can be of a different type, nor only *fellow body members*, because sons of the same family can be of a different substance and glory.

Therefore it follows, AND FELLOW PARTICIPANTS OF THE PROMISE.

3:7 (VIII.32-34) ACCORDING TO THE WORKING OF HIS POWER. Whose *power* confirms me. Or rather: Whose *powers* confirm my Gospel.

3:8 (VIII.35-52) TO ME WHO IS THE VERY LEAST etc. I do not think that the Apostle would have agreed in the hidden part of his own mind that he truly said that he was the least among all the saints, for instance, among the ones who were in Ephesus, Corinth, Thessalonica, or in the whole world. Whereas it is a sign of humility to say that *I am the least among all the saints*, it is an offence of lying to have one thing locked in your heart, and to disclose another with your tongue. But Paul did this according to the precept of the Lord who said: *The one who wishes to be greater among you, should become less than all the others, and the one who wishes to be first, should be the last of all others*. Therefore the Apostle Paul was weaker *than all* those who desired themselves to be *weak* for the sake of Christ, and on account of that he was *greater than all others*. He said, *I have laboured more than others*. TO PREACH THE UNSEARCHABLE RICHES OF CHRIST. It is asked, why are they being *preached* among the people, if they are *unsearchable*? If *hidden*, by what account are they recorded through Paul?

Therefore, *unsearchable* and *hidden*, must here be understood on two levels. That they were *unsearchable riches* before, and *now* after the passion of the Lord they have been *revealed*. Or,
certainly, the things which — according to their own nature — were unsearchable by the human
being, have now been recognized by us through God’s revelation, at least to whatever extent we
can.

3:9 (VIII.53-56) AND TO ILLUMINATE ALL. He illuminates then, when he calls the
Gentiles and the Jews to the faith of Christ. OF THE HIDDEN MYSTERY. I.e., of the
incarnation of Christ and of the calling of the Gentiles to faith, which in previous times was only
known to God.

3:10 (VIII.57-67) SO THAT IT MIGHT BE KNOWN TO THE RULERS etc. So that through
me to these, who rule through every church with heavenly matters and gifts, the manifold wisdom
might be known. Likewise: If to the rulers and authorities in the heavens – even if some
interpret this as the ruler of this air and his angels – the manifold wisdom of God was unknown,
which now has been revealed to them through the church, how much more was it unknown to the
patriarchs and prophets, who, as we showed above, were not ignorant concerning the mystery of
Christ, but just like the Apostles, did not understand it! From this we understand that the cross of
Christ was not alone of benefit to us, but also to the angels and revealed the secret, which they
did not know before. Finally they ask: Who is this king of glory?

3:11 (VIII.68) WHICH HE MADE. Which God formerly decreed in his own mind.

3:12 (VIII.69-71) IN WHOM WE HAVE FREEDOM. I.e., a pure conscience or purity of
conscience. AND ACCESS. I.e., so that our mind may have access to the Lord.

3:13 (X.1-4) ON ACCOUNT OF WHICH I SEEK etc. But you must pride yourselves more
when you understand that I cannot hold myself back from such a great trust in certain hope.
What are punishments among infidels, are victories among the faithful. WHICH IS YOUR
GLORY. Instead of ‘which are’.
3:15 (XI.1-8) FROM WHOM EVERY FAMILY etc. In this alone the Father of all is superior to others, so that they may be called fathers. Or rather: Father of the Lord through nature, likewise also all other creatures have merited the name of family by means of adoption. Moreover, in the same way as we, who are not from the stock of Abraham, if we had the faith of him, are called sons of Abraham and also refer to both patriarchs and prophets as fathers, thus I think that angels also have rulers of their own kind, which they rejoice to have as fathers in the heavens.

3:16 (XI.9-10) IN THE INNER HUMAN etc. Where the interior is strong through faith, there Christ dwells, not where the exterior is fattened.

3:18 (XI.11-18) SO THAT YOU CAN COMPREHEND WHAT IS THE BREADTH etc. Certain people say that breadth should be understood as the wide way which leads to death, length as the eternal life, height as the heavenly powers, depth as the opposite powers and authorities of the infernal ones, namely, so that those who have knowledge of all these might know what to choose and what to refuse. Nothing round has length and breadth and also height and depth, but is equal on all sides.

3:19 (XI.19-25) EVEN TO KNOW THE ONE THAT SURPASSES etc. I.e., so that we may be worthy through knowledge and good fellowship to have the all surpassing love of Christ. The love of Christ, however, surpasses knowledge, although it is born from that, just as a fruit surpasses a root. SO THAT YOU MAY BE FILLED etc. Because knowledge without love is of no benefit. For there will be no fullness of the gifts of God, if love is wanting.

3:20 (XII.1-3) NOW TO HIM etc. He returns to that which he said above: On account of which I bend my knees et cetera; and now he adds: Now to Him etc. ACCORDING TO THE POWER. Not according to our merits.
3:21 (XII.4-5) UNTO ALL GENERATIONS OF GENERATIONS. Immense benefits must be celebrated with immense praises.

4:1 (XIII.1-5) I AM A PRISONER IN THE LORD. I.e., a prisoner in jail, or, which is better, through the love of Christ. Some people say the body is a fetter to the soul. IN THE LORD. I.e., not by my transgression. Or: I implore you in the Lord. THAT YOU WALK WORTHILY. I.e., Not erring to the right nor to the left.

4:2 (XIII.6-9) AND WITH MILDNESS. A mild person harms no one. SUFFERING ONE ANOTHER IN LOVE. Because the philosophers suffer, but not in love. But we must sustain when we love, not that we may be praised, but so that the person we are sustaining makes progress.

4:3 (XIII.10-13) ANXIOUS TO PRESERVE THE UNITY OF THE SPIRIT. Not saying: I of Apollo or I of Cephas. Some call this here not the Holy Spirit, but an affection of the mind, as: They had one heart and one soul.

4:4 (XIII.1-4) ONE BODY. I.e., in the church the unity of all members must have one consensus in one body, the members, which have been called to the one hope of salvation. AND ONE SPIRIT. I.e., Holy. Although it bountifully provides many things.

4:5 (XIII.5-6) ONE BAPTISM. Although it is given under three persons; and this against the Valentinians, who say there are two baptisms.

4:6 (XIII.7-10) WHO IS ABOVE ALL. The father is above all things, because he is the creator of all; the Son is through all, because the things have been created through him; the Holy Spirit is in all. For He Himself is given to the believers and we are His temple.

4:7 (XV.1-6) BUT TO EACH ONE OF US etc. Now he is speaking about the difference of gifts, lest people become envious of each other because of this, since Christ divides among all

399 Normally translated: FOREVER AND EVER.
individually. ACCORDING TO MEASURE. As much of our capacity as of his liberality.

Although God is immense, nevertheless he gives grace according to measure, i.e., so that we can grasp it.

4:8 (XV.7-9) CAPTIVITY. For the ones the devil was holding in death, Christ took captive for life. HE GAVE GIFTS. In a psalm he says: You received gifts. He himself therefore both gives and receives in his own members.

4:9 (XV.10-13) BUT THAT HE ASCENDED, WHAT DOES IT MEAN OTHER THAN THAT HE ALSO DESCENDED? He explains why it is said that he, about whom it is not at all doubtful that he is everywhere, ascended, namely, according to the form of a slave, to which he did not descend in space but in dignity.

4:10 (XV.14-21) ABOVE ALL THE HEAVENS. Did he, who crosses over all the heavens, which the philosophers call spheres, really physically stand in the highest vault of heaven? Or alternatively, must he certainly be believed to have sat above the heavens, i.e. above the invisible things, disdaining all corporeal and contemplating all eternal things? The latter I think is better.

SO THAT HE MIGHT FILL ALL THINGS. So that he might fill not only prophets, but even these secret dispensations, things which we also cannot understand, namely how the blood of Christ was of benefit to the Angels and the Underworld.

4:11 (XV.22-27) AND HE HIMSELF GAVE etc. Now he treats the diversity of the before mentioned gifts according to the measure of the gift of Christ. OTHERS AS PASTORS AND TEACHERS. However he does not say: ‘others as pastors and others as teachers, but: others as pastors and teachers, so that, whoever is a pastor, ought to be a teacher. BUT OTHERS AS EVANGELISTS. Every apostle is an evangelist, not every evangelist is an apostle.

4:13 (XV.28-59) UNTIL WE ALL ATTAIN etc. From the book, The City of God, XXII:
If we say that the bodies of all which have as yet been larger than the Lord must be reduced to the size of the Lord’s body, then very much substance will perish from the bodies of many, although he himself promised that not a hair would perish. Therefore it follows that each one will receive his own size, either that which one had in youth, even if one died at an old age, or what one would have had, even if one died at an early age.

Also, regarding what the Apostle noted about the measure of the age of the fullness of Christ, we should understand to have been said either on account of something else, i.e., that, when the perfection of all the members among the Christian nations to that head, then the measure of his age is completed. Or alternatively, if it was mentioned in reference to the resurrection of the bodies, we may understand it to have been said in such a way that the bodies of the dead will rise neither below nor beyond youthful form, but at his age and robustness which we know Christ reached here. For even the most learned people of this world have defined “youth” as being around thirty years old; when that age has been reached in that particular time, from then on already a person begins to decline into a more burdensome and old age. And therefore it was not said in the measure of the body or in the measure of stature, but: in the measure of the age of the fullness of Christ.

Likewise in that same book:

Behold, here is the perfect man, consisting of head and body, which consists of all its members, which will be completed at their fitting time, but nevertheless new members are daily being added to that same body, while the church is being built, to whom it is said, You are the body and members of Christ. According to the effectual working, he said, in the measure of each part. Therefore just as there is a measure of each part, so it is of the
whole body, which consists of all its own members. Surely the latter is the measure of the fullness of Christ, about which it has been said: In the measure of the age of the fullness of Christ. This fullness is also noted in that place, where Paul says concerning Christ: And he gave himself as the head over all the church, which is his body, his fullness, he who fills all things in all things.

4:14 (XV.60-66) BABIES WAVERING. I.e., unstable like a wave, which is moved by the wind. AND WE MAY BE CARRIED ABOUT BY EVERY WIND OF A DOCTRINE. I.e., so that we are neither ignorant nor dubiously tottering and like an unskilled steersman, setting the sails of our faith by the wind of every doctrine, lest we may be easily shipwrecked, or that we may never be able to arrive at the harbor of perfection. AND CUNNING. I.e., of dialectical skill.

4:15 (XV.67-69) BUT DOING THE TRUTH. I.e., doing everything in truth because of the love of Christ and nothing in hypocrisy. THROUGH ALL THINGS. I.e., advancements, be it either gifts or works.

4:16 (XV.70-81) FROM WHOM THE WHOLE BODY HAS BEEN COMPOSED. I.e., to all members individually, i.e., to all just ones. AND CONNECTED. I.e., by tendons and skin. BY EVERY JOINT. Of the members, namely, from the head down to the feet. The body connected from the head by every joint or subjoining of effectual working grows, whilst the members edify one another through love, in the same way that each member is increased in its own measure. I.e., so that he who is an eye through wisdom, may grow into the number of those who perform the duty of the eye, and that all individual members are of benefit in their place. IN LOVE. While he says: In love, this relates to the feeling, because this must be understood entirely in a spiritual sense. Therefore these things are obscure among us, because they are spoken metaphorically.
4:17 (XVI.1-4) THIS THEREFORE I SAY AND ATTEST IN THE LORD. Those whom he had interrogated above, he here binds together by adjuring to the Lord. This therefore I say to you, who are about to reach the measure of the age of the fullness of Christ, lest you walk as the Gentiles walk.

4:19 (XVI.5-8) WHO DESPAIRING OF THEMSELVES. I.e., having no hope of the heavenly rewards. AND OF GREED. This does not relate to greed as it sounds at face value, but to libido and luxury, because they are never satisfied by living licentiously.

4:20 (XVII.1-2) THUS YOU DID NOT LEARN etc. To learn Christ is the same as also to hear wisdom.

4:21 (XVII.3-9) IF NEVERTHELESS YOU HAVE HEARD HIM. If however all, who seem to hear Christ, were hearing, he would never say to the Ephesians and certainly to those, to whom the Apostle had revealed the secrets of Christ: If nevertheless you have heard him. AND HAVE BEEN TAUGHT IN HIM. Sometimes he teaches us in our hearts through himself, at other times he teaches through teachers. JUST AS TRUTH IS etc. For holy ones see through a mirror and through riddles, but truth is in Jesus.

4:22 (XVII.10-11) ACCORDING TO THE DESIRES OF SIN. I.e., doing all things according to the desires of the heart of fleshly thoughts.

4:24 (XVII.12-16) AND PUT ON THE NEW SELF. I.e., Christ, through whose fellowship we are adorned. WHO ACCORDING TO THE WILL OF GOD HAS BEEN CREATED IN RIGHTEOUSNESS etc. Behold it has been shown what Adam lost: righteousness, holiness, and truth. Righteousness, i.e. in judgments, holiness, i.e. in works, truth, i.e. in words.
4:25 (XVII.17-19) SPEAK THE TRUTH. Up until ‘his own’ has been taken from Zecharia.

BECAUSE WE ARE MEMBERS OF EACH OTHER. Members cannot deceive or mangle each other, so neither should you.

4:26 (XVIII.1-7) BE ANGRY AND DO NOT SIN. Evidently he says this: Be angry about your vices and your rage, lest on you who sleep, the sun of righteousness – Christ – begins to set, when your minds have been obscured on account of your anger and lest, as Christ disappears, you offer the devil a place in your hearts. Alternatively: DO NOT LET THE SUN SET OVER YOUR ANGER. I.e., so that anger may be brief, not extended into tomorrow’s day.

4:27 (XVIII.8-9) DO NOT GIVE THE DEVIL AN OPPORTUNITY. For the gate to the devil is sin, in that way the gate to the Holy Spirit is righteousness.

4:28 (XVIII.10-27) THE ONE WHO WAS STEALING, MUST NO LONGER STEAL. I.e., let the one who once stole the fruits of other people's labor, now make compensation by means of his own work, and let him give to the needy through work who made many needy through theft. MORE; BUT RATHER LET ONE LABOR, WORKING WITH HANDS. One does good, who resists evil and does good and works in the field of one’s own soul, so that one is filled with spiritual bread and can give provision to the hungry and needy, giving at the proper time food of heavenly doctrine to one’s own fellow slaves. If however he is of such a kind, who does good, therefore also he who steals consequently steals words and doctrines, living from thievery, stitching for oneself pillows from thievery and collecting from here and there pieces of cloth taken from the Scriptures, so that he can make a torn tunic. “Devil” is the Greek word, but in Latin he is called “accuser”. But in the Hebrew tongue the adversary or opponent is called “Satanas” and by the Apostle, “Belial”, i.e. ‘without a yoke’, because he cast the servitude of God from his own neck. Aquila translated “Belial” with “apostate”. WORKING WITH ONE’S
OWN HANDS ON WHAT IS GOOD. Not on what is evil as there are many dishonest or evil trades, like fraud etc.

4:29 (XVIII.1-2) BUT ONLY SOME [WORD AS IS] GOOD. I.e., a word, which teaches virtues.

4:30 (XVIII.3-22) AND DO NOT GRIEVE THE HOLY SPIRIT OF GOD. Not because the very essence of the Holy Spirit can be grieved, since it has eternal and immutable happiness, but because it so dwells in holy people, so that it may fill them with love, by which it is necessary, so that humans may rejoice spontaneously by the progress of believers and their good works. And it is inevitable for this reason that they are also grieved by the fall or sins of those about whose faith and piety they were rejoicing. Such sadness is laudable, because it comes from love which the Holy Spirit pours out. For this reason the Spirit himself is said to be grieved by those, who act in such a manner, so that the saints are saddened by their deeds, for no reason except that they have the Holy Spirit. By this gift they are so good that evil people sadden them, especially those they know or believed to have been good. Such sadness truly not only must not be blamed, but must even eminently be praised and proclaimed. Likewise: DO NOT GRIEVE THE HOLY SPIRIT. Speaking to humans he introduces human comparisons, so that we may understand from ourselves, how much injustice we cause the Holy Spirit, when we pollute his house in us with some filth of sin. IN WHOM YOU HAVE BEEN SEALED. But, we have been sealed by the Holy Spirit. ON THE DAY OF REDEMPTION. I.e., on the day of baptism.

4:31 (XVIII.23-31) BITTERNESS. I.e., rancor in the heart. ANGER. Which appears in the face. Even once rage has been extinguished, it longs for vengeance. INDIGNATION. And from haughtiness, when we judge someone as unworthy, and therefore do not wish to support him. SHOUTING. That, namely, which descends from rage. But yet, Isaiah was ordered to
shout in a good sense and the Lord himself was shouting in the temple: *If anyone is thirsty, let him come and drink.* It is a crime to commit a sin, a shout to make public a sin. WITH ALL MALICE. He includes all evil things by saying: *malice.* Or alternatively: *malice* is that which can return the same to an enemy.

4:32 (XVIII.32-35) AND BE TO ONE ANOTHER etc. After he had eradicated vices, he plants virtues, as Jeremiah says: *So that you may eradicate and plant.* KIND. I.e., from the heart. COMPASSIONATE. I.e., through works. FORGIVING. I.e., pardoning sins.

5:1 (XX.1-2) MOREOVER BE IMITATORS OF GOD. I.e., by indulging sins, for example: *Lord, do not judge these* etc.

5:2 (XX.3-8) AND HANDED HIMSELF OVER. Therefore just as *he surrendered his own life for us, so also let us lay down our lives for our brethren.* AN OFFERING AND SACRIFICIAL VICTIM. Every sacrifice is called an *offering,* but a *sacrificial victim* when it concerns living things. And in Christ, both are contained because he was offered and was alive. IN THE FRAGRANCE OF SWEETNESS. *The sweetest fragrance* is of love.

5:3 (XXI.1-4) BUT FORNICATION etc. He briefly treats *all crimes* by noting two *roots* of crimes, i.e. *fornication* and *avarice.* AND ALL IMPURITY. A tickling of the flesh and a flow of seed from whatsoever kind of rubbing of the stomach area.

5:4 (XXI.5-14) OR WICKEDNESS. I.e., libidinous thought. There is the following difference between ‘*silly talk*’ and ‘*scurrility*’, in that ‘*silly talk*’ contains in it nothing wise or worthy of the human heart, but ‘*scurrility*’ descends from a wise mind and from mature reflection aims at certain urbane or rustic or shameful or facetious words, which we can call humorous by another word, so that it may cause the listeners to laugh. But even these things must be rejected by holy men, for whom it is more agreeable to weep and groan. BUT RATHER GIVING OF THANKS.
Not so that we may give thanks to God, but so that we may be thankful or obliging among humans, thus: so that your speech may be seasoned with salt.

5:5 (XXI.15-19) FOR YOU SHOULD KNOW THIS etc. He writes this against those who say that faith alone can suffice. OR A GREEDY PERSON. Who thus honors riches as gods. For in a greedy person there is idolatry, because he cherishes the ‘Scripture’ of money itself. Just as the god of the voracious is the stomach, so money is called the god of the greedy.

5:6 (XXII.1-25) AMONG THE SONS OF DISOBEDIENCE. I.e., among the Sodomites or among those who perished in the flood. It must be noted that after the six prohibited faults from above: fornication, impurity, avarice, wickedness, silly talk, scurrility, he has now marked only three, fornication, impurity, and avarice, because of which everyone who has been guilty of them cannot have an inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and God. For if a silly talker and a joker were strangers from the kingdom of God, in the same way as the three, which he especially separated, then it would seem to be a cruel idea not to forgive the weakness of human fragility, since even things said in jest condemn us. For who does not lapse in speech, is a perfect person. But in saying these things we do not give an opportunity for silly talk and scurrility, since they are not being excluded from the kingdom, but in the same manner that there are diverse mansions with the Father, and a star differs from another star in glory, so does also the resurrection of the dead. Although someone may be a stranger to fornication, impurity and lust, nevertheless if he was a silly talker or joker, he will not hold that place, which he would have possessed, if he had not had these faults. Someone may respond that, because silly talk and scurrility do not have the same guilt as fornication, impurity, and avarice, should wickedness not also be named with the three above? In addition to that it must be said that here wickedness means hidden thought, when our feeling is inflamed to lust and our aroused spirit is kindled by titillations of the flesh and
nevertheless restrained by the fear of God at judgment time. Just as silly talk and scurrility, so also turpitude is not a capital offence, nor does it exclude one from the kingdom for eternity.

5:7 (XXII.26-27) PARTAKERS IN THEM. I.e., in fornication, impurity, and avarice.

5:8 (XXII.28) SONS OF THE LIGHT. I.e., of Christ, or of faith, or of knowledge.

5:9 (XXII.29-31) IN ALL GOODNESS. I.e., in kindness to all, as: God makes his sun rise over the good and evil. IN RIGHTEOUSNESS. I.e., of works and judgments. AND IN TRUTH. I.e., of words.

5:10 (XXII.32-36) INVESTIGATING etc. Because it seems that the whole sentence is chaotic, it must be comprehended by methodical arrangement: Do not become partakers of them investigating what may be pleasing to God. For you were formerly darkness, but now you are light in the Lord, so walk as sons of the light, and show the fruit of the light in goodness and righteousness and truth.

5:11 (XXII.37-40) AND DO NOT MINGLE etc. I.e., because light is cannot mingle with darkness. The works of the darkness are those which lead to darkness. REPROVE. I.e., sinners, since you are the light.

5:12 (XXII.41-44) FOR THOSE THINGS WHICH ARE DONE IN SECERET. I.e., fornication, impurity, and avarice. BY THOSE. Namely, by sons of disobedience. EVEN TO SPEAK. At one point he uses the term wicked things for the sake of convenience, at another occasion he does not use any term at all, for the sake of shame.

5:13 (XXII.45-49) ALL THINGS WHICH ARE REPROVED. Things which are done secretly by the sons of disobedience, so that – because they are rebuked – they may be changed from that into something better, and the changes made manifest in public, and the things made public
become light. BUT EVERYTHING THAT BECOMES VISIBLE IS LIGHT. I.e., he begins to be light, when he has believed and is joined to you.

5:14 (XXII.50-67) ON ACCOUNT OF WHICH HE SAYS, RISE UP etc. I, according to my feeble knowledge, diligently searching all the editions of the Old Scriptures and even the volumes of the Hebrews, never found this quotation. Unless perhaps we should say this: In the same manner as at some point the prophets were speaking in a meeting of the people: The Lord says these things, and Since the Lord has spoken, so also the Apostle full with the Holy Spirit, suddenly burst out and spoke in words which Christ spoke in him: The Lord says these things.

And this furthermore must be examined, how to one and the same it is said just as to one sleeping: Rise you who sleep, and as to one dead: Rise up from the dead. Therefore because there is a spirit of man, which we always find written about favorably, and a soul, whose infirmities we read as modes of death from sins, therefore that which now is said: Rise you who sleep, let it be assigned to the spirit, and what follows: Rise up from the dead, let it be applied to the soul. For the soul which sinned will die itself. However, we never read of the death of the spirit. But Christ will rise as the true light to the one who rose from sleep and was resurrected from the dead.

5:15 (XXIII.1-4) BE CAREFUL HOW YOU WALK. Not for the purpose of doing treachery, but for the purpose of being aware of sin. An example of the former: the clever person arranges his own steps. Alternatively: Carefully, i.e. discerning good and evil.

5:16 (XXIII.5-9) REDEEMING THE TIME. I.e., they are persevering in good works by penitence with their remaining time, ‘buying back’ time passed in sins, which has been sold by the malice of humans. SINCE THE DAYS ARE EVIL: Through metonymy, for ‘these people who are in the days’, because days cannot be evil.
5:17 (XXIII.10-11) BUT UNDERSTANDING. I.e., examine the law, in which his will is contained.

5:18 (XXIII.12-17) AND DO NOT BE DRUNK ON WINE etc. In that same manner as we cannot serve two masters, God and mammon, so we cannot be equally filled with the Spirit and wine. For the one who is filled with the Spirit has wisdom, gentleness, respect, chastity, but the one who is filled with wine has folly, rage, impudence, lust. Certainly, I reckon that this means, in one single word: ‘luxury’.

5:19 (XXIII.18-30) IN THE PSALMS etc. These are hymns which proclaim the strength and majesty of God and always admire his benefits and deeds, which all the psalms contain, to which a Hallelujah has been added either at the beginning or at the end. Psalms, moreover, properly relate to a moral standard, so that through the instrument of the body we know what must be done and what must be shunned. The one who truly debates about the things above, and, as a subtle disputant, explains the harmony of the world as well as the order and concord of all the creatures, that one sings a spiritual song. Or certainly on account of more simple minds let us say what we desire, more manifestly: a psalm refers to the body, a song to the mind. Therefore we ought to sing and chant the psalms and praise the Lord more with the soul than with the voice. This is certainly what is said: Singing songs and psalms in your hearts to the Lord.

5:20 (XXIII.31-32) ALWAYS GIVING THANKS FOR ALL THINGS. I.e., which happen to you, whether for the good or bad.

5:21 (XXIII.33-42) BEING SUBJECT TO ONE ANOTHER IN THE FEAR OF CHRIST. Let subjection happen on account of fear of Christ, since we fear to offend him. Let the bishops hear this, let the elders hear it, may every rank of teacher hear it, that they should be subjected to their subjects, and let them imitate the Apostle saying: For although I was free from all, I made myself
a slave of all, so that I would win all, and in another place: Serve one another. The Savior also received the form of a slave, so that he might serve his own disciples, and he washed their feet.

There is the following difference between the leaders of the gentiles and those of the Christians, that those dominate over their subjects, we serve and in that we are greater, if we were the smallest of all.\(^{400}\)

5:22 (XXIII.1-3) WOMEN TO THEIR MEN etc. Up to this point to the community, now he teaches something to each individually, so that they do not relent from performing obliged kindnesses for each other.

5:23 (XXIII.4-9) JUST AS CHRIST IS THE HEAD OF THE CHURCH. I.e., How there is a holy connection between Christ and the church, thus also there must be a holy community between man and wife. THE SAVIOR HIMSELF IS OF THE BODY. I.e., Christ saved the church. Or: Man is the savior of the woman’s body in necessities and pains, since the female is the more feeble sex.

5:25 (XXV.1-5) MEN LOVE YOUR WIVES. Here a holy love must be understood, so that desires may be restrained, so that pregnant ones do not copulate endlessly until birth. JUST AS ALSO CHRIST LOVED THE CHURCH. Thus do not refuse even to die for the holiness of your wives, if it should be necessary.

5:26 (XXV.6-10) SO THAT HE MIGHT SANCTIFY HER. For water washed the body, doctrine washed the soul. So also, cleanse the bodies of your wives with continence and your soul with doctrine. IN THE WORD OF LIFE. I.e., in doctrine after baptism. Or: The word, which is sung by the priest at baptism.

5:27 (XXV.11-12) SO THAT SHE MAY BE HOLY. I.e., the soul. AND STAINLESS. I.e., concerning the body.

\(^{400}\) Cf. Matthew 19:30.
5:29 (XXV.13-16) BUT NOURISHES AND CHERISHES. So that we may offer the wives clothing and food and all that are necessary. JUST AS CHRIST [NOURISHES AND CHERISHES] THE CHURCH. *In the same manner that Christ nourishes the church,* thus: *How often I desired to gather your sons,* etc.

5:30 (XXV.17-19) BECAUSE WE ARE MEMBERS. His *members* ought to emulate him in every way. CONCERNING HIS FLESH. Either: Of the human nature, which he received from Mary. Or: Of the church.

5:31 (XXV.20-23) ON ACCOUNT OF THIS ONE WILL LEAVE etc. Spiritually, Christ left God *the Father, and the mother, heavenly Jerusalem,* and came to earth to the church. AND HE WILL CLEAVE TO HIS OWN WIFE. Spiritually, Christ is joined to the church [having been] collected from both nations.

5:32 (XXV.24-25) THIS MYSTERY IS GREAT. For there are also other lesser *mysteries.*

5:33 (XXV.26-39) NEVERTHELESS EACH etc. I.e., although I have spoken *in Christ and in the church,* nevertheless it is proper to be saved in marriage. BOTH LET EACH MAN LOVE HIS OWN WIFE JUST AS HE LOVES HIMSELF. *Love your neighbor as you love yourself.* In accordance with the Savior’s interpretation, everyone is our neighbor. Therefore will there be no difference of love between the love for a wife and that of any other humans? That is absurd to say. For a simile is stated concerning the *neighbor,* so that *you may so love* him, *just as yourself,* and that you desire to be saved, but the ‘*just as’* concerning the *wife* is called an adverb of comparison; it does not signify a simile, but a proof and confirmation, just as it is spoken about Christ: *As of the only begotten from the Father.* AND LET THE WIFE FEAR HER HUSBAND. There are two meanings in the word ‘*fear’*. One is in which the slaves have the *spirit of servitude in fear,* the other can be said as reverence: and let the wife revere her husband.
6:1 (XXVI.1-2) SONS, OBEY YOUR PARENTS. I.e., when they order things which are not contrary to the will of the Lord.

6:2 (XXVI.3-19) WHICH IS THE FIRST COMMANDMENT. It is asked why he said this now:

*Which is the first commandment,* since it is the fourth or fifth. For the *first commandment* is:

*There shall be for you no other gods but me.* In that same way others distinguish: *Which is the first commandment in a counter-promise,* as if the four other *commandments,* which have been said before this, do not have a *promise.* But they seem to me not to have rather acutely observed that also in the second *commandment* a *counter-promise* is associated; for it says: *Do not make for yourself idols nor any likeness* until: *And I give compassion to these, who love me* etc.

Observe the words of promise: *Giving compassion* etc. Perhaps therefore, because the Decalogue was given to the people departing from Egypt as the first law, each commandment of the Decalogue is first in comparison with those precepts that were later written in the law. But whoever defends the first exposition, will not speak otherwise on the second *commandment,* but under one single text and speech, and that not so much a *promise* is given as a sentence is completed in the praise of god *who gives compassion* etc.

6:5 (XXVIII.1-6) IN THE SIMPLICITY OF YOUR HEART. I.e., done away with the previous haughtiness and pretence. And here the Apostle provides, *lest the doctrine of Christ is blasphemed* in another, if believing slaves should become *useless* to their masters. JUST AS TO CHRIST. Beautifully he adds, *just as to Christ,* namely so that a slave may not hear the carnal master, should that one wish to order something contrary to the precepts of God.

6:6 (XXVIII.7) NOT TO THE EYE. *Not* only to the present masters.

6:7 (XXVIII.8-12) JUST AS TO THE LORD. He serves *the Lord,* who *with a good will* performs a servitude of the soul to masters. For God does not demand work alone, but also a
good will. WITH A GOOD WILL. I.e., not with *protesting murmurs*, lest you be freed among humans from grace and among God from the reward.

6:9 (XXVIII.1-7) FORGETTING THREATS. Lest it is attributed to your malice, if they flee.

BECAUSE IT IS THEIR LORD AND YOURS WHO IS IN HEAVEN. I.e., just as you can appropriate over slaves, even more so can God appropriate over you, as in: *With whatever judgment* etc. THERE IS NO PARTIALITY TO INDIVIDUALS WITH GOD. Who alone only judges intentions and according to those prefers the better before the worse, choosing as a criterion deeds not humans.

6:10 (XXX.1-2) CONCERNING THE REST etc. After the special commandments for men and women he now generally admonishes all.

6:12 (XXX.3-8) RULERS OF THIS WORLD. I.e., who rule in the air their own angels. For the devil divided different duties among his own followers. Or alternatively: RULERS OF THIS WORLD. I.e., of lovers and carnal things of *this world*. OF THESE DARKNESSES. This entire earthly life is called *darkness*. *Certainly the light shines in the darkness*. IN THE HEAVENS. I.e., to the ones hastening about in the air.

6:13 (XXX.9-13) IN THE EVIL DAY. Either he signifies the *evil day* as the present time, about which he had spoken above: *Redeeming the time, since the days are evil*, on account of the anxieties and labors of this life, or certainly it is the day of the end and judgment, when the devil, the enemy and avenger, will desire to claim us for his side.

6:14 (XXX.14-21) THEREFORE STAND. Lest you be moved from the line, but fix a stable step upon *Christ the rock*. HAVING GIRDED YOUR LOINS. A girdle of continence. Because therefore *loins* are always understood of begetting and seed, it seems to us that he *fastened* his own *loins*, who never pays back his debt to his wife nor serves lust. IN TRUTH.
I.e., not in hypocrisy. *For no one will be crowned* etc. BREASTPLATE OF RIGHTEOUSNESS. Just as a breastplate is woven with many circles and hoops, thus righteousness is entwined with different types of virtues.

**6:16 (XXX.22-24) SHIELD OF FAITH.** Without a shield everyone armed is vulnerable, thus also these virtues without faith cannot save. Therefore in all struggles we should be fortified by faith.

(sic!) **6:15 (XXX.25-47) HAVING FURNISHED YOUR FEET WITH SHOES.** He teaches assurance of preaching whether the opportunity is convenient or inconvenient, so that having been shoed, one may walk bravely. *Take up, he said, the shield of faith, in which you can extinguish all the flaming arrows of the most evil one.* Therefore faith is that which, receiving the most ardent arrows of lustful desires, kills them out of fear of the future judgment and because of the cruelty of the heavenly kingdom. *And the breastplate, he said, of love.*

Certainly, that breastplate of love is what, enveloping the vitals of our chest and protecting them when they are exposed to lethal wounds of damaging desires, rejects hostile blows and does not allow the darts of the devil to penetrate our inner being. *For it bears all things, suffers all things, endures all things. And hope is the helmet of salvation.* A helmet is defense for the head. For, because our head is Christ, we always ought to protect that, by the hope of future good just as by an impregnable helmet, in all temptations and persecutions, and most importantly we ought to guard our faith to him unimpaired and unviolated. For concerning other members, whenever one of them has been mutilated, it is possible nevertheless to live on, although in a weakened state; but no one without a head is preserved even for a brief amount of time. *And the sword of the spirit, which is the word of God. For it is sharper than any two edged sword, and piercing all the way to the divisions of the joints and marrows of soul and spirit, and a discerner of thoughts*

---

401 1 Thessalonians 5:8
and intentions of the heart, namely, dividing and hewing off whatever carnal or earthly thing it has found within us.

6:18 (XXX.48-49) THROUGH EVERY PRAYER. I.e., always carry or demand this sword.

6:19 (XXX.50-51) FOR THE OPENING OF MY MOUTH. Thus: Lord, open my lips etc.

WITH BOLDNESS. Without fear of persecution.

6:21 (XXXI.1-10) TYTHICUS WILL MAKE ALL THINGS KNOWN. This must be doubly understood: For this reason, either Tythicus was sent to Ephesus to announce to them that the chains of the Apostle progressed the faith of the Gospel, at that time when he also wrote to the Colossians saying: Tythicus will make all things known to you etc. For it was a great consolation to hear that Paul, who was in Rome – the queen of cities – was triumphing over his chains. Or certainly, Tythicus was sent so that he might report to them his conversation with Paul of which they were ignorant, and that he may give to them as it were a role-model for life, who learn of the deeds and virtues of the Apostle and wish to imitate him. And this could not have been a small consolation.

6:23 (XXXI.11-15) PEACE AND LOVE TO THE FELLOW HUMANS etc. Peace and love and faith make the perfect Christian. For love is as fruitless without faith as faith without love or peace. For love is greater than peace. For no one can be held in hatred and not also be loved.

6:24 (XXXI.16-18) IN INCORRUPTION. Either: In chastity. Or: In whose heart the joy of Christ should be invaded by no adulterous love of this age.
III. Conclusion

Sometime during 840-851, Sedulius Scottus emigrated from Ireland to the Carolingian empire, where he attained notoriety as both a scholar and poet. Among his many literary works is the *Collectaneum in Apostolum*. The evidence suggests that the *Collectaneum* represents Sedulius’ attempt to introduce and exposit the Pauline letters in the same manner that Servius introduced and exposted Virgil’s *Aeneid*. Like Servius, Sedulius’ introduction is organized via the seven circumstances, his commentaries combine the interpretative work of others with his own comments, he employs specific formulae for formatting and explaining, and the function is clearly pedagogical.

The rhetorical schema, the seven types of circumstance, which was widely referred to by later Latin rhetors and Cicero in particular, and which I ultimately traced back to Aristotle, served as the template that Sedulius used to compose his Prologue. Through this schema, Sedulius introduces the Pauline letters (fourteen in his collection) and relates a number of early Church traditions regarding Paul the Apostle and his letters, including a number of historical critical matters such as places of authorship and dating.

Unlike theological *collectanea* of the same period, Sedulius’ *Collectaneum* is practically devoid of any particular agenda, but instead represents an attempt to collect and edit the best exegesis available for virtually every verse of each Pauline epistle. Nonetheless, one can occasionally detect from Sedulius’ commentaries certain doctrinal stances on specific theological and ecclesiastical issues as they arise in given verses, such as an Augustinian line on predestination as well as the assertion of the divinity of Christ and the related trinitarian theology as articulated in the Athanasian Creed. In addition, one can certainly tell from reading Sedulius’ commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians that educating his readers on baptism was very
important. Also, as a matter of historical interest, Sedulius does not reflect any anti-Semitic sentiment. Overall, the intended function of the *Collectaneum* was likely for pedagogical use.

The genre of works from which Sedulius most often draws are commentaries, but there are representatives of other genres as well, such as Augustine’s *civ.* and Bede’s *De temporum ratione*. The three most commonly used authors by Sedulius within the Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians are Jerome, Augustine, and Pelagius. Jerome and Augustine were both widely read and revered throughout the Carolingian age, but the influence of Pelagius is most likely due to Sedulius’ Irish background. Since most of the extant witnesses to Pelagius’ commentary (during this time) were Irish or British, it seems likely that Sedulius brought Pelagius’ text with him from Ireland. Using this text and the resources available to him in Liège and the broader Rhineland area, Sedulius was able to compose his *Collectaneum*.

Most of his selections should be regarded as near verbatim, or, as abbreviated but accurate in their representation of the source. Thus, the Latin literary style within the *Collectaneum* resembles that of his sources, as one would expect given the close nature by which they were copied and edited into the work. Hence there is a milieu of late, classical, and archaic Latin constructions. The explicit goal of many authors contemporary to Sedulius and working within the same genre was to create a harmonious, brief, and lucid commentary, all of which are attributes characteristic of Sedulius’ *Collectaneum*. The literary achievement and original contribution of the work is located within Sedulius’ selections and skill as an editor, though he did occasionally include his own exegetical remarks.

While dissonance was the norm in Carolingian society, Sedulius nonetheless proves to be an ideal candidate for study as he enjoyed the fellowship of high ranking ecclesiastical and secular leaders and knew and communicated with fellow scholars and authors throughout the
Carolingian empire. Now for the first time in English translation (or any other modern foreign language) Sedulius’ Prologue and commentaries on Galatians and Ephesians as contained within his Collectaneum in Apostolum are available, and the content should appeal to readers interested in any one of a number of disciplines including Classics, Christian biblical and theological studies, and early medieval history.
Appendix

Translations of Latin quotations from 3.3.ii: “The History of the Septem Circumstantiae”. All translations are my own.

Cicero, De Inventione, 1.21.29

A narration will be probable if there will be seen to be within it those things which normally appear in the truth; if the dignity of the persons will be preserved, if the causes of deeds exist, if the means of performance seem to have been existent, if the time was suitable, if there was a sufficient interval, if the place for performing that same action, the deed about which the narration is concerned, will be shown to have been ideal, if the matter will be applied to the nature of those who will do it, and to the cultural norm of the people and to the opinion of those who will listen. And the narration consisting of these elements will be able to be like the truth.

Cicero, De Inventione, 1.24.34 and 1.26.38

All claims are confirmed by argumentation, or by that which is attributed to [1] persons, or by that which is ascribed to the matters… Regarding the [2] action of a matter [i.e. the what], which was the second topic about these things which were ascribed to the matters, [3] the place, [4] the time, [5] the mode, [6] the occasion, and [7] the means will be investigated.

Quintilian, Inst. Orat., 3.5.17-18

Apollodorus defines a cause thus: ‘a cause is a matter with all its own parts viewing towards a question.’ Or: a cause is a matter, whose aim is a dispute.’ “A matter” itself is then defined thus: ‘A matter is a coming together of people, places, times, causes, modes, incidents, deeds, instruments, speeches, written works and non-written works.’ Let us now understand a cause as
the Greek word hypothesis and a matter as the Greek word peristasis. … Cicero defines it in these words: ‘A cause is discerned by definite people, places, times, actions, and either by all of or at least most of them.’

Quintilian, Inst. Orat., 4.2.52

A narration will be credible before anything if first we consult our mind lest we say something contrary to nature, then if we place the causes and reasons before the deeds, not before all, but before those which we investigate, if we establish the people as fitting to the deeds we wish to be believed, like e.g. someone accused of theft to be greedy, someone accused of adultery as libidinous, someone accused of murder to be heedless, or if we defend the contrary to these: moreover we address places, times and similar things.

Quintilian, Inst. Orat. 4.2.53…54…55

There is however a certain structure of a credible matter… [while giving the narration] it would not be altogether unuseful if we sow certain seeds of proofs as long as we remember that it is a narration and not a proof… Finally, we will introduce in the narration everything we are going to draw out in the proof: the person, cause, place, time, instrument, and occasion.

Halm, 323.16-21

That which is left, will be probable, if certain seeds of arguments and questions were besprinkled everywhere, provided they are not thought to be types of argumentation: as time, by which we say that the deed is done, is present, and the cause: why it was done, and the person: who did it,
and the means why it is believed that she/he was able to do it, and the place where it was done. For these matters it is allowed to take examples from all the narrations in Cicero.


‘A narration will be probable if there will be seen to be in it those things which are accustomed to appear in the truth.’ According to the order of his own division, after he had dealt with the brief and open narration, he now but begins to dispute about a probable narration. A narration will be probable, he says, if in it there are all those things which are accustomed to be found in the truth; for every argument pertaining to the truth is included in these seven things. … [chart inserted here in Halm’s text, see n. 292 above] … The seven things, as mentioned above: who, what, why, where, when, how, by what means, all writers of academic disciplines have dealt with and have embedded in the precepts of their own academic disciplines. But Cicero considering the nature of things, times, and people adds to all those an eighth circumstance, namely opinion, and rightly so. For all things are strong neither through themselves nor by nature, but by opinion.

J. Victor, *Ars Rhetorica*, (3, 16-27, Giomini)

Therefore, the theme having been established, you ought first to attend to the circumstance, whose parts are the following seven: ‘who, what, when, where, why, how, by what means’. But of all of these or most of them the congregation of reason makes the cause, and is examined here first, whether the circumstance of debate consists in it or rather whether the material which was
set forth, may be disconnected. For the theme is disconnected, which does not have a circumstance, such as ‘a wealthy person accuses a poor person of wrongful deeds’. You see this cause is not able to stand; for neither the when nor where nor why nor anything else is able to be asked, so that the dispute seems to permit a debate, but it is exposed as, so to speak, bare and weak. Nor nevertheless should you think that all the species of circumstance can be found in every theme, but sometimes all, sometimes most of them: but if, as is written above, almost every circumstance is absent, the cause is not able to stand.

Augustinus, De Rhetorica 7-8 (47,1-50,9, Giomini)

Now, since indeed enough has been said about the difference of general and specific questions and the thesis has been separated from a hypothesis, so that the thesis stands thoroughly apart by fact and name, it seems to be the next things to say what exactly it is that produces a hypothesis, i.e. a debate. For it is the circumstance of things, which Hermagoras calls peristasis, without which no dispute at all can exist. What is, however, a peristasis, can more easily be understood by its partition than by its definition. For there are seven parts of circumstance, i.e. of peristasis, which Hermagoras calls ‘pieces of the circumstance’, Theodorus ‘particles of the matter’, i.e. elements, because from their connection questions happen just as from the connection of letters we see names and words. But whether they are more correctly called ‘particles’ or ‘pieces’, let us, under omission of the debate over terminology, say what they themselves are. For they are the following: who, what, when, where, why, how, by what means, which the Greeks call ‘resources’. However, the rational congregation of all or most of these things manufactures the question. But doubtlessly the quality of individual parts must be made explicit. Who denotes the person… What denotes the thing, which seems to have been done or said or thought by someone,
seems to be done, to be said or to be thought by someone, or about to be done, about to be said or about to be thought by someone… When denotes the time… Where denotes the place… Why indicates the cause of doing or saying or thinking a thing … How signifies the demonstration of something that happened, that is happening or will happen… The resources, which we call aids, denote these things, through which it is said that something has been done…

Halm, 102, 20 – p.104, 31

With the condition having been discovered, what shall we consider? The entire material through the seven circumstances. Why not divide them immediately? Because first we ought to consider without order the cause as a whole, then we ought to order all things, which have been discovered, summarily into questions. What are the circumstances?: “person”, “thing”, “cause”, “time”, “place”, “mode”, “material”. The “person” is considered in how many ways? Twenty one… What shall we consider in the “thing”? The thesis… Every cause is of what kind?… In how many ways is “time” considered?… “Place” is all-together of what kind?… The “mode” is all-together of what kind?… In what ways is “material” considered?… Whatever was placed in the theme, for which reasons was it assembled? Either so that it might raise a debate or so that it might augment the questions.

Halm, 515, 10-15

There are two types of questions, one of which is finite, and the other infinite. In Greek the finite one is called an ‘hypothesis’, in Latin it is called a ‘cause’, and occurs where there is a dispute with a certain person: 2. The infinite one is called a ‘thesis’ in Greek and a ‘theme’ in Latin. The infinite one does not have a certain person, nor does it contain any certain circumstance such as
‘place’ or ‘time’. But in a cause all certain things are contained, whence the ‘theme’ is, as it were, part of the ‘cause’.

Halm, 527, 7-20
For in judicial cases it is often questioned what is fair, in an epideictic speech is understood what is honest, in a forensic, deliberative speech is considered what is honest and useful. A cause has how many circumstances? A full cause has seven circumstances: person, deed, time, place, mode, occasion, and faculty. In “person” it is asked “who” acted, in “deed” it is asked “what” was done, in “time” it is asked “when” it happened, in “place” it is asked “where” it happened, in “mode” it is asked “how” it could happen, in “occasion” it is asked “why” one wished it to happen, in “faculty”, whether someone was supported by the power of acting. Through these things a cause is able to be both confirmed and weakened. For vainly you seek in disputes what has been done, if the person of the agent is unknown. And again you vainly reveal the person if the deed is not linked to the person. Likewise, in such a time or in such a place such a thing could not happen, likewise it could not be done in that way you assert, nor therefore did anyone desire to do it, nor did such a person have such a power, to be able to do this.
Bibliography

Greek and Latin Texts

Augustinus, *De Utilitate Credendi; De Duabus Animabus; Contra Fortunatum; Contra Adimantium; Contra Epistolam Fundamenti; Contra Faustum*, CSEL 25, ed. Iosephus Zycha (Imprint Vindobonae: F. Tempsky, 1891).


English Translations

Broadie, Sarah (trans.), and Rowe, Christopher (ed.), *Nicomachean Ethics* (USA: Oxford University Press, 2002).


**Secondary Literature**


Gorman, Michael, *Biblical Commentaries from the Early Middle Ages* (Florence, 2002).


Herren, Michael W. and Shirley Ann Brown, Christ in Celtic Christianity: Britain and Ireland from the Fifth to the Tenth Century (New York: Boydell Press, 2002).


Hoffmann, Andreas, Augustins Schrift "De Utilitate Credendi": eine Analyse (Münster: Aschendorff, 1997).


Przychocki, Gustavus (ed.), *Accessus Ovidiani* (Krakow, 1911).


--- “Was the Commentary on Virgil by Aelius Donatus Extant in the Ninth Century?”, *Classical Philology*, 26/4 (1931), 405-411.


